



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

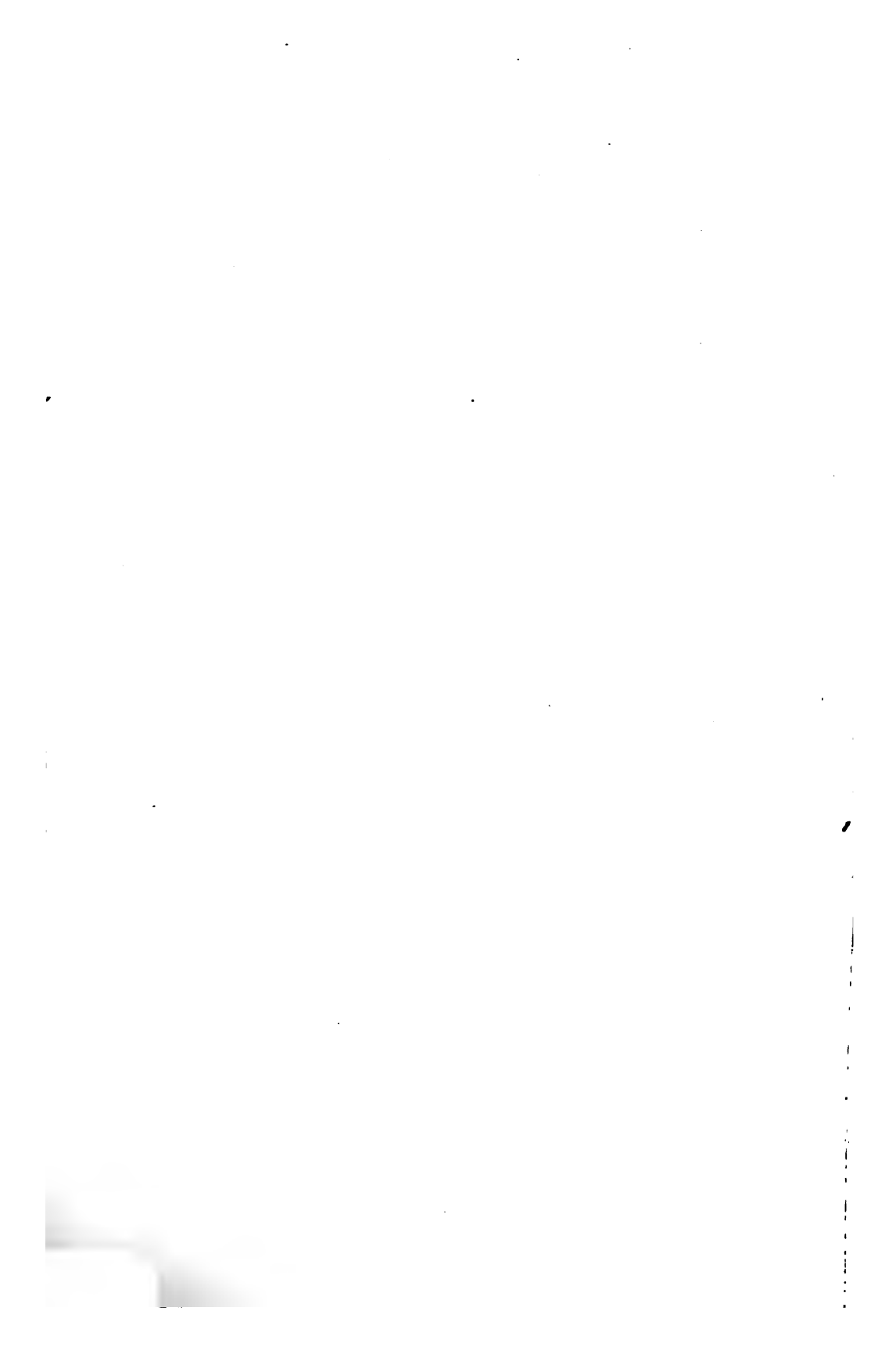
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

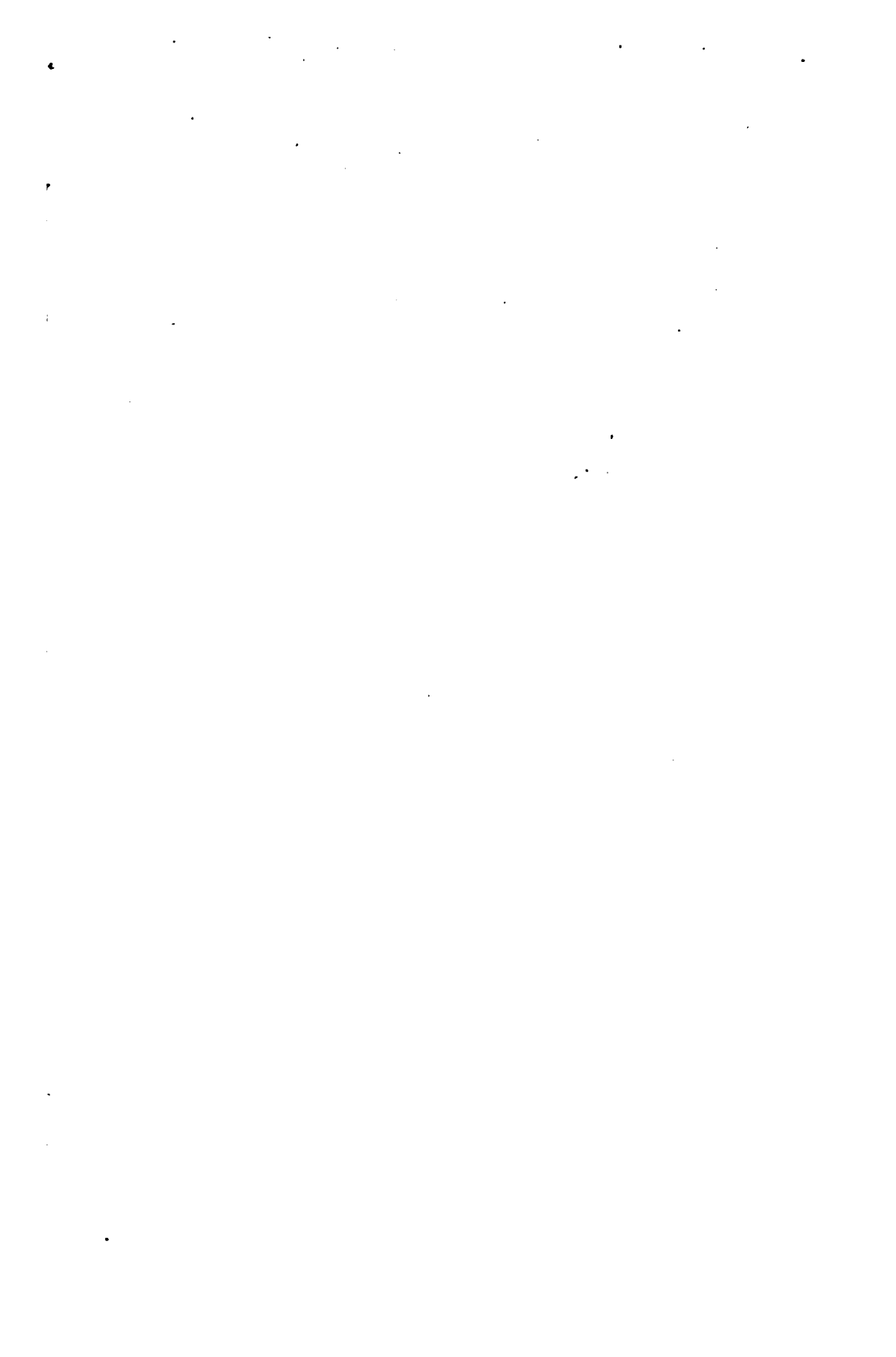
Br  
6302  
154













THE LIFE AND LETTERS  
OF  
JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE







*John Collingwood Bruce  
From a portrait by Rudolf Lehmann*

THE INDEX

WILLIAM PEAR KNOTT AND SONS  
PRINTERS AND BOOK-BINDERS  
1895





THE  
LIFE AND LETTERS  
OF  
JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE  
LL.D., D.C.L., F.S.A.  
OF NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE

BY HIS SON  
THE RIGHT HON.  
SIR GAINSFORD BRUCE, D.C.L.

"THE GLORY OF CHILDREN ~~ARE~~ THEIR FATHERS."  
—Proverbs xvii. 6.

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS  
EDINBURGH AND LONDON  
1905

Br 6302.154



E. H. Hall fund -

TO

*MY DEAR WIFE,*

*Who has brightened the happy moments of  
my life by the smile of her approval,  
solaced me in disappointment,  
and  
comforted me in sorrow,*

*I INSCRIBE THESE PAGES.*



## PREFACE.

---

THIS book is the record of a life not marked by stirring incidents, but occupied in scholastic duties, in quiet and unostentatious literary and antiquarian research, and in the earnest endeavour to extend the influence of religion and philanthropy.

Such a life possesses a charm of its own which it is believed will be found not less attractive and instructive than the excitements of a more public career.

In arranging these memoirs it has been thought advisable not to regard strictly the chronological order. Dr Bruce's many-sided character inclined him to occupy himself simultaneously with various religious, philanthropic, and intellectual concerns, and the continuity of the narrative would have been interrupted by a strict adherence to the order of date.

G. B.

YEWHURST, BROMLEY, KENT,  
*November 1905.*



# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
Notes by Dr Bruce on the history of his parents and of his own early life . . . . .	1

## CHAPTER II.

Boyhood—Mill Hill School . . . . .	13
------------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER III.

1821, At Glasgow University — 1822, at Edinburgh University — October 1823, again at Glasgow University — 1825, takes B.A. degree at Glasgow and enters the Divinity Hall of the Secession Church—April 1826, takes M.A. degree—Nov- ember, licensed as a preacher by the Presbytery of Newcastle— 1830, preaches at various places on the Border—Appointed to preach in London during April and May 1831—September at Ardentinny, determines to give up the ministry and join his father in the school . . . . .	19
---	----

## CHAPTER IV.

1831, Taken into partnership by his father — Oct. 1834, death of his father—Outline of system of education pursued—Letter from Mr Robert Stephenson — Practice of mental arith- metic in the school—1845, edits tenth edition of Bruce's Geog- raphy—1848, publishes hand-book of English history—Lecture on best means of promoting the moral improvement of youth—	
---	--

Religious instruction in the school—Friday afternoon Bible-class—Printed outlines of the lectures on the evidences of Christianity—Speech by Sir Wemyss Reid—Annual public examination—1836, presentation by scholars of silver cup and salver—1843, schoolroom rebuilt—1858, Oxford local examination—Jubilee dinner—Retirement of Dr Bruce from the school—Silver salver given by his mother . . . . .	50
--	----

CHAPTER V.

1833, Marriage—1834, birth of son—1838, birth of daughter, Frances; 1839, died—1840, birth of daughter named Williamina Bennett—1841, visits English cathedrals—1843, visit to Oxford—Visit to Allans Green—1844, letters from St Andrews—1845, death of Mr Gainsford . . . . .	80
---	----

CHAPTER VI.

1845, Lecture on the different styles of Gothic architecture—Visit to Carnarvon and Conway—1847, lectures on castellated architecture—Handbook to the Castle of Newcastle—The restoration of the castle—Banquet in the great hall of the castle—Restoration of the Black Gate . . . . .	97
---	----

CHAPTER VII.

Roman Wall—Summer of 1848 expedition along the Wall—Course of lectures on the Wall before the Literary and Philosophical Society—1849, pilgrimage along the Wall—Lecture on the Wall at Chester—1851, publication of book on the Roman Wall—Resolution of thanks passed by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle—Letters from friends respecting the book—Centenary anniversary dinner of the Society of Antiquaries of London—Meeting of the Archaeological Institute at Newcastle—1852, paper on Bremenium—2nd edition of 'The Roman Wall'—M'Lauchlan's survey and memoir . . . . .	110
---	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

1855, Duke of Northumberland suggests that a complete catalogue be prepared of the whole of the inscribed stones found in Northumberland—1857, illustrated catalogue of inscribed stones in museum at Newcastle—Roman aqueducts—"Thorngrafton	
---	--



## CONTENTS.

xi

Find"—1860, lectures on Roman coins—1863, handbook to 'Roman Wall'—1862, letters from Lord Ravensworth—1867, 3rd edition of 'Roman Wall'—1872, discovery of the piles of the Roman bridge over the Tyne at Newcastle—1873, lectures on the Wall of Hadrian with special reference to recent discoveries—1875, publication of 'Lapidarium Septentrionale'—1877, presentation of plate to Dr Bruce by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle—1876, discovery of Coventina's fountain—1886, second pilgrimage along the Wall—Visits to the Wall by Lord Stanhope, the Dean of Westminster, the Social Science Congress, and the Archbishop of Canterbury—Letter from Mr Howard of Corby . . . . .	137
---	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

The question "Who built the Wall?"—Views of Stukeley, Hodgson, and Bruce—Pamphlet by Mr Bell of Irthington—Dr Bruce's answer—Pamphlet by "A Cumbrian"—Articles in 'Archæological Review' by Mr J. R. Boyle . . . . .	179
--	-----

## CHAPTER X.

1853, Degree of LL.D. conferred—Re-union of old pupils—Cholera in Newcastle—Journey to Rome, difficulties encountered—Journey to Bayeux—Lectures on Bayeux Tapestry—Publication of book on Bayeux Tapestry—1855, the Society of Antiquaries resolve, at the suggestion of the Duke of Northumberland, to collect the ancient melodies of Northumberland—Committee report to the Duke—1858, committee resolve to prepare airs for printing—1876, lectures on the pipes and pipe music of Northumberland at Newcastle and at Alnwick—1877, pipe competition at Newcastle—1878, second lecture on pipes and pipe music at Newcastle—1879, third lecture at Newcastle—1882, a collection of ballads, melodies, and small-pipe tunes of Northumbria published—1885, lecture at the International Inventions Exhibition on the Northumberland small-pipes . . . . .	185
---	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

Bible Society—Town Mission—The Royal Jubilee School—Young Men's Christian Association—Daily prayer-meeting—Brandling Place Home . . . . .	215
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

- Royal Infirmary, Newcastle—1868, Dr Gibb's letter—Improvements made in the management—1888, elected chairman of House Committee—Letter system abolished—Full representation of working men on House Committee—1891, speech at a meeting of working-men governors—Resolution of House Committee on the death of Dr Bruce—1892, public meeting called by the mayor to consider the erection of new wing to the Infirmary in memory of Dr Bruce—Ladies' singing band and flower mission in the Infirmary—Dr Bruce's efforts to get leave for the band to sing in the wards of the workhouse infirmary . . . . . 228

## CHAPTER XIII.

- 1851, Dr Bruce leaves Clavering Place Chapel—Conducts services in hired room—Joins Blackett Street Church—1854, visit to London—1855, his eldest son goes to London—Second son born—Oxendon Chapel—1841, Dr Robert Moffat visits Dr Bruce—John Smith Moffat becomes a pupil at Percy Street school—1857, dinner to Dr Livingstone—1862, Hartley Pit catastrophe—Religious revival in Newcastle—1863, preaches at Whittingham—1864, religious meetings in the Circus—Other religious work—Preaches at Keilder—1882, preaches at Bellingham and at Wooler—1886, at Otterburn—Assists at services at Keilder 246

## CHAPTER XIV.

- 1850, Speech at public meeting called to consider the opening of Newcastle post-office on Sunday—1854, lecture on local memorials of George Stephenson—1855, speech at Mechanics' Institute, Newcastle—Mary Magdalene Hospital—Charter of King James I.—Act of Parliament authorising the pulling down of chapel on bridge and building new chapel at Barras Bridge—1826, the Rev. Richard Clayton appointed master—1856, his death—Efforts made by townspeople for the reorganisation of the charity—Corporation appoint the vicar to the mastership—Public meeting to protest—Speech by Dr Bruce—Inquiry by Charity Commissioners—Proceedings carried on for eleven years—1861, Clayton Memorial Church—Charity reorganised—1874, speech at Alnwick Mechanics' Institute—1878, elected guardian of the poor—1879, opening of industrial dwellings—1881, presides at meeting in support of village homes . . . . . 266

## CHAPTER XV.

- 1856, Address by Dr Bruce in Edinburgh—1857, he] visits Normandy with Sussex Archæological Society—Attends dinner to Mr George B. Bruce—1858, lecture on Trajan's column—1863, handbook to Newcastle—Undertakes to prepare book on Concentric Circles—Commences catalogue of British antiquities at Alnwick Castle—1868-1872, letters to his wife—1869, completion of book on Concentric Circles—1877-1888, letters to his son—1881, catalogue of Alnwick Museum printed . . . 286

## CHAPTER XVI.

- 1861, Short trip to the Continent in May—Trip to Italy in the autumn—1862, marriage of daughter; 1874, death of daughter—1867, visits Dijon, Vienne, Rome, Perugia, Catania, Syracuse, Malta, St Paul's Bay, Gallipoli, Pescara, Ancona, Christian antiquities at Ravenna, Mont Cenis Pass . . . 310

## CHAPTER XVII.

- 1854, Visit to Lord Londesborough—1864, Archæological Institute at Warwick—Visit to Canon Greenwell at Durham—Visits Alnwick Castle in September—1865, death of Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland—Visit to Lord Lonsdale at Lowther—Holiday in Wales with his eldest son—1869, visit to Raby Castle—1875, visit to Stanwick—Gift to his eldest son of a chair of old Roman oak . . . 326

## CHAPTER XVIII.

- 1859, Attends Synod at Edinburgh—Letter to his eldest son on his call to the Bar—1863, again attends Synod at Edinburgh—1881, elected Moderator of the Synod of the Presbyterian Church of England—Addresses the Evangelical Society of Geneva—1882, appointed with Mr Fraser to visit the churches in the Bristol Presbytery . . . 335

## CHAPTER XIX.

- 1866, Elected President of Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club—1869, enters his younger son at Westminster School—1879, excava-

tions at Binchester—1880, at Lincoln Hill during the spring—Attends meeting of Archæological Institute at Lincoln—Visit to Alnwick in November—1882, University of Durham confers degree of D.C.L.—Attends meeting of Archæological Institute at Carlisle—1883, appointed Rhind lecturer—Visit to Rome—Speech during Newcastle election—Celebrates golden wedding 353

## CHAPTER XX.

1884, Dr Bruce's right to take the marriage service in Presbyterian churches duly licensed for marriages affirmed—1885, the circulation by the Literary and Philosophical Society of books having an infidel tendency objected to by Dr Bruce—Letter to his son after Tyneside election—1888, preaches in Blackett Street Church a sermon on the 25th anniversary of the ministry of Mr Leitch—Keeps up interest in Northumberland small-pipes—Letter to his eldest son on his entering the House of Commons as member for Holborn—1890, reads before the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle obituary notice of Mr Clayton—Steps taken to complete Hodgson's History of Northumberland—1891, speaks at a meeting of the Society of Antiquaries in support of a motion of condolence with the Duke of Northumberland on the death of the Duchess—Temporary illness of Dr Bruce . 366

## CHAPTER XXI.

April 1892, last illness and death—Funeral and obituary notices—September 1893, memorial tablet on house, 2 Framlington Place, unveiled by Lord Percy—October 1896, statue of Dr Bruce placed in niche of wall of new building erected on site of the school—Unveiling monument in St Nicholas Cathedral by Lord Ravensworth—Sermon by the Rev. Richard Leitch on the occasion of Dr Bruce's death—April 1893, death of Mrs Bruce—Memorial window . . . . . 381

# LIFE AND LETTERS OF DR J. COLLINGWOOD BRUCE.

---

## CHAPTER I.

NOTES BY DR BRUCE ON THE HISTORY OF HIS PARENTS  
AND OF HIS OWN EARLY LIFE.

BETWEEN the years 1876 and 1901 Dr Bruce compiled careful notes relating to his family history. In this introductory chapter these notes will be followed, although some of the events referred to will require fuller reference in the subsequent chapters.

The first entry upon the blank page fronting the title of my father's family Bible is the following in his own handwriting :—

“John Bruce, born May 15th, 1775, and Mary Jack, born March 24th, 1782, were married in the parish church of St Andrew, Newcastle-upon-Tyne, on the 14th day of June 1804.”

My mother's father was Mr John Jack of 12 Golden Square, London. He was a Scotsman, and I believe came from the neighbourhood of Inverness. I have

understood that when he was coming up to London by sea he was seized by the pressgang for service in the Navy; that he made his escape, and getting to land had to hide himself and lie about in the fields at night. By this means he became subject to rheumatism, from which he suffered all his life. He carried on the business of a tailor, and eventually at his death had a good and genteel business. He was an eminently pious man. He was a Presbyterian, and attended the antiburgher congregation which worshipped in Bow Lane in the city. The congregation afterwards removed to Oxendon Chapel, Hay Market. I think that Dr Wilson and Dr Jerment were the ministers of the congregation in his time. He was twice married. By his first wife he had one daughter. His second wife was Agnes Barclay, the daughter of George Barclay, who belonged, I think, to Edinburgh. Mary, my mother, was the fourth child of this marriage.

Frances Jack, the second child of this marriage, became an assistant in a school for ladies conducted by Miss Wilson in Saville Place, Newcastle, in the building now occupied by the Young Women's Christian Association. It was a school of a first-class character. There is in St Andrew's Church a marble slab commemorating Miss Wilson's merits. My mother also became an assistant in Miss Wilson's school. My father attended Miss Wilson's school to give instruction to the young ladies in the branches of education with which he was familiar. Hence the attachment between him and my mother which resulted in their marriage. At this time a school was carried on at Barras Bridge by my uncle Edward and my father.

My father and mother on their marriage took the house No. 14 Albion Place.<sup>1</sup> My mother remained in Miss Wilson's house until the time of her marriage.

This marriage was assuredly, as the common phrase has it, "made in Heaven." A blessing rested upon the heads of my father and mother in answer to the believing prayers of their godly parents. I do not wonder that my mother experienced some trepidation on the occasion. My father had had a hard upbringing, and his constitution was enfeebled by the hardships he had endured. He had very little money to start the world with, and that had been very hardy earned. The world was before them. Happily my mother had some money, her share of what her father had left his family. Without this they could not have furnished the house in Percy Street where my father so long conducted the important school with which his name is so honourably connected. My mother was a woman admirably fitted to be my father's helpmate in such an establishment. She was of a most kind and loving disposition, a perfect lady in her manners, a wise and prudent adviser, and one who never thought of self. She always worked up to and often beyond her strength.

When I was about to marry, my mother's best wish for us was that we might enjoy as much happiness as she and my father had done.

It appears from a letter written by my father when in London on his wedding trip that he dined at Woolwich with Dr Hutton. He and his brother had doubtless become acquainted with him through the "Gentlemen's and Ladies' Diaries" of which he was editor, and to which they were contributors.

<sup>1</sup> Now 44 Leazes Park Road.

My father kept up a familiar correspondence with the Doctor as long as he lived, and at his death wrote the best memoir of him which exists. I occasionally called upon Dr Hutton when I was going to and from Mill Hill. My father in the same letter mentions a book which they wished to sell. This was 'The Introduction to Geography and Astronomy,' by E. and J. Bruce. It says much for the enterprise and thirst for knowledge of these young men, who had no school training, that they entered upon the study of these subjects and prosecuted them so successfully as to be able to produce the clear, succinct, and valuable (for educational purposes) book which they have done. They sold the book to Messrs Baldwin & Cradock, publishers. It went through eight or nine editions. I edited the last two or three editions, making considerable additions to the book.

I was born on 15th September 1805 in the house No. 14 Albion Place.

The day was Sunday. I am afraid I was the cause of much commotion. I have heard that a joint of veal which was hung up at the fire for dinner was neglected and spoilt.

After the midsummer holidays 1806, the school was opened in the premises in Percy Street, where it was carried on until the close of my connection with it and for some time afterwards. I was ten months old at the time of my father going to it.

My uncle Edward and my father must have tried their constitutions considerably by hard work and poor fare. At length my uncle's health quite broke down, and he died on the 12th June 1806, and was buried at the high end of St Andrew's Churchyard.

The premises in Percy Street and the situation



were very different from what they are at present. What is now the Circus was the house of a private gentleman, Mr Middleton Hewitson, with gardens behind it. Between Mr Hewitson's house and my father's was a plantation stretching all the way up to the Leazes. The trees of the plantation (that was the name it bore) were chiefly sycamore. I well remember how we boys used in the early summer to cut the overhanging branches and make whistles from them. On the other, the north side of the house, there was a small house like most of those in the street, but not then a public-house. In the front of the house what is now the Haymarket was the parade-ground where the soldiers used to be exercised. It had a wooden railing round it. We boys used to use it as our playground, one of our favourite games being "Prisoner's base." Prudhoe Street was not in existence then, all the ground between that part of Percy Street and Northumberland Street being in grass, and used as a bowling-green. At the back of the house, in the direction of the Leazes, was a garden: the boarders were allowed to cultivate little patches of it at the sides for their own amusement. The drawing-room of the main house originally occupied the whole of the front of the first floor. This my father made use of as his schoolroom. He soon, however, had occasion to use in addition the two rooms at the back of it at each extremity. As the number of resident pupils increased he found it necessary to devote the whole of the main house to domestic purposes, and he built a schoolroom extending over the whole of the offices and kitchen at the back of the main building. When this was done the large drawing-room was divided into two

rooms, the one forming a bedroom, the other being used as a drawing-room.

My mother took the classes of the youngest boys, and taught them cleverly and kindly. She continued at this task till my sister Anne was able to relieve her. This I think was a grave mistake. Being, as eventually proved, the mother of a large family, having a large household to manage, her time was fully occupied without having any school duties to discharge. I think that her strength and her energies were unduly drawn upon.

My father was a good teacher. He took care to make his pupils understand their work. He was a good mathematician; geography and astronomy together with the use of the globes were favourite subjects; and from my own experience I can only say he made his pupils feel an interest in the history of our native country.

He was not a Latin scholar, though he availed himself of such leisure and such opportunities as he could command for acquiring some knowledge of it. He did not attempt Greek.

In order to conduct the Latin and Greek classes he employed classical teachers, who resided out of the house.

When I joined my father, Mr Bell, who was then classical master, retired and set up school for himself in Newcastle, and I took the classical teaching in the school.

In addition to the classical teacher, my father had an English tutor, who resided in the house, and who had a good deal to do in taking charge of the boarders at over hours. One of these ushers, a native I believe of Edinburgh, afterwards became an African

explorer. As a little boy I distinctly remember him. In the tenth edition of Bruce's 'Geography,' page 180, I have inserted the following note respecting him:—

“After many unsuccessful attempts by other travellers, Major Laing, once an usher in the Academy of the author of this work, at length succeeded in reaching Timbuctoo. He resided there for some time, but on his return through the desert was murdered in his tent by order of the Sheik of Zarvat.”

In the earlier part of his career, when Napoleon ravaged the Continent and the war feeling was strong in England, my father trained many boys for the Army and Navy. Several went direct from his school to the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich.

In the earlier part of this century travelling was not easy, and boys could not be so readily sent to distant schools as at present. When, therefore, a good school was in the neighbourhood, county gentlemen often sent their sons to it rather than to celebrated schools at a distance. My father had many scholars of the upper classes who now would be sent to Rugby, Harrow, Winchester, Westminster, or Eton.

I may quote from letters from two distinguished pupils of my father. One of them, Major Thain, a very distinguished soldier who was killed in the Kyber Pass, ends one of his letters, dated 19th March 1812, by saying: “I consider my obligations to you such that I shall ever subscribe myself most sincerely and affectionately yours, William Thain.”

The other letter is dated 2nd December 1839, and

is also from a very distinguished pupil, Robert Stephenson. I had written to him to congratulate him upon the honour he had received on the completion of the London and Birmingham Railway, and in his reply to me he said, among other things: "Your letter, however, possessed an additional interest beyond a mere complimentary epistle; it revived the recollections of our earlier days, and above all it reminded me of your worthy and esteemed parent to whom I owe so much; indeed, it is to his tuition and methods of modelling the mind that I attribute much of my success."

My father's labours in the school were hard, and were continued up to the time of his death. School went in at eight in the morning and, professedly, continued to twelve at noon, but it was often a quarter of an hour and sometimes half an hour later before the work of the morning was done and school dismissed. It met again at two and continued to five.

In the evening the boarders assembled in the school-room to learn their lessons for the next day, and this required his presence or that of the resident teacher.

During the agitation respecting the Reform Bill in 1832, the boys got up a movement in reference to school - reform. They presented a respectful but numerous signed petition to my father requesting certain changes, most of which he granted. One of these, if I remember rightly, was that school should not commence in summer until half-past eight, and in winter at nine o'clock.

One circumstance characterised the school,—that was the holding of a public examination on the day

we broke up for the midsummer holidays, to which the friends and parents were invited.

The classes were called up one after another and examined by some gentleman of prominent position in the town, the masters in the school, of course, doing their best to display the attainments of the boys. Recitations by the lads enlivened the proceedings, and drawings and specimens of their handwriting were exhibited. I believe my father got the idea of these examinations from my mother, who had seen something of the kind in Edinburgh.

My father was disposed to be an early riser, and he generally took the boarders out for a walk of a morning before breakfast up the Moor or along the Jesmond fields, which are now covered with buildings.

His midsummer holidays were generally spent with his family at the seaside: we went by postchaise to Tynemouth or Whitburn, or more frequently, particularly of late, to Cullercoats, which was then a small fishing village.

In 1817 he came to Edinburgh and the Highlands. I had been invited to spend my holidays with the Jamesons of Leith, and this had perhaps been one circumstance which drew my father northward on that occasion. But he was also stimulated by the perusal of Sir Walter Scott's works—the "Lady of the Lake" and others—to see something of the Highlands. There was then an utter absence of the public means now so abundant of visiting these scenes, and he was obliged, though not accustomed to horse exercise, to hire a horse and so survey the country.

My father was for a number of years a member of the committee of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle, and he took an active part in

the business of this society. At its monthly meetings, as I first remember it, papers were read and discussions took place. It was at one of these meetings that he read his paper on the life of Dr Hutton.

He was deeply interested in the work of the British and Foreign Bible Society, and he was one of the Secretaries of the Newcastle Bible Society from the year 1823 to his death.

In the year 1831 he prepared and published, through Baldwin, Cradock, & Co., an 'Historical and Biographical Atlas,' accompanied by a 'Summary of History,' by means of which young people could the more easily transfer to their memories the leading features of the history of the world.

He naturally took a warm interest in the public meetings which were occasionally held in Newcastle in support of the Bible and Missionary Societies. These meetings were comparatively rare then. The art of public speaking was not much cultivated when I was a boy, and those who possessed it were thought much of. He took his pupils to these public meetings, and we regarded them as a great treat. At one of the Church Missionary Meetings the Rev. Leigh Richmond spoke admirably, and my father asked him to come and address the boys in school, which he did. The result was that the boys started a subscription among themselves. I have before me a list of the subscribers. Of the subsequent history of many of them I know nothing. Most of them doubtless are dead, but I like to look upon their names.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dr Bruce himself many years afterwards prevailed upon Dr Robert Moffat, the missionary, when he was in Newcastle, to address the boys in the school, and they started a subscription the proceeds of which were devoted towards the expense of printing a Secuana hymn book. See *post*, chap. xiii.

At sundry intervals during my college life I assisted my father in the management of the school, but towards the end of the year 1831 I felt it to be my duty to give myself entirely to school work, and became partner with my father in the management of the school.

Unhappily he did not long survive our partnership. He went out one inclement evening to see after a pupil living in Gateshead who was doing badly. He got wet, which produced a chill which affected him inwardly, and after about a week's illness he was called to his rest. I somehow or another did not realise the fact that he was dying, and I had little conversation with him upon the important subject. He died on the 31st October 1834, in the 60th year of his age, and was interred in Westgate cemetery. Many of his pupils, as well as deputations from the Bible and London Missionary Societies, followed his remains to the grave. A handsome monument was subsequently erected by his pupils and friends to his memory.

After his death my wife and I and our young son Gainsford removed to the schoolhouse in Percy Street, and my mother with the younger members of her family came to reside in our house in Albion Place, my wife and I taking entire charge of the school.

My mother was spared to us for many years, giving us kindly advice, setting before us a loving Christian example, and helping us in everything.

She died in Ridley Place on 22nd June 1872, and her remains were laid beside those of my father in the Westgate cemetery. During her latter years she kept a diary, in which there is a constant reference to family matters. It beautifully shows how

warm was her loving attachment to her family, and what a devoted and happy Christian she was.

For some years my father attended on Sunday, in the forenoon at least, the services in Hanover Square Chapel, Newcastle, the minister of which was the Rev. William Turner. He was a Unitarian, but he did not for some years preach Unitarian doctrines. His preaching was of a general, or what you may call moral, character.

At the time my father set up school in Newcastle Mr Turner was in his prime. His reputation as a scholar was great. As the minister of one of the old Puritan congregations, and one who professed great catholicity of sentiment, he gathered around him people who liked good literary preaching but who were not Unitarians. After a time, Mr Turner openly advocating Unitarian principles, my father felt he could no longer be a hearer in his chapel. He resorted to the Presbyterian places of worship, and finally settled down under the ministry of Mr Pringle in Clavering Place.



## CHAPTER II.

### BOYHOOD. MILL HILL SCHOOL.

THERE is little to record concerning the subject of this memoir as a boy. He seems to have been of a prepossessing appearance. When about twelve years old he spent his summer holidays with friends of his father in Leith. Miss Moncrieff, a friend of his family, met him there, and she wrote as follows to his mother :—

“A more delightful boy I never saw. If his countenance is at all the index of his mind, he promises to be all a fond parent could wish. He resembles his father—though handsomer, with much intelligence.”

As he approached his thirteenth year his parents thought it advisable to send him to another school. His father sought the advice of Dr Hutton. Dr Hutton replied :—

“I cannot recommend a school for your son; they are all so bad that I would not venture to do it. I conversed with our friend Dr Gregory about it, and he seemed to have one in view which he intended to mention to you.”

Dr Gregory's advice was conveyed in a letter to

John Bruce from which the following is an extract :—

“ROYAL MILITARY ACADEMY, WOOLWICH,  
12th May 1818.

“You could scarcely have proposed to me a more difficult problem than that to which your letter refers. A good school for boys, in which, while the literary and scientific progress shall be as far as possible assured, the moral and religious character shall not be neglected, is a *desideratum*. At present I can only call to mind one school in which classical and scientific studies go on *pari passu* at the same time that moral and religious instruction constitute an essential consideration. It is the Protestant Dissenters' Grammar School at Mill Hill in Middlesex.”

At the close of the year 1818 John Collingwood Bruce was entered at Mill Hill School, and remained there until the summer of 1820. He went up to London to join the school by the Royal Mail.

His letters home from school are the ordinary chatty and sprightly letters of a school-boy fond of his home and feeling the restraints of school life.

In one of his letters to his father, dated 25th August 1819, referring to the possibility of his adopting the ministry in the Presbyterian Church as a profession, he says :—

“I do not know what to think of eight years' study at College, but it is not the whole year round, and I should like to be of use to you sooner; but, as you say, there is plenty of time to consider.”

In a letter to his mother on the 18th September in the same year, he says:—

“You ask me what I am in. I am reading in the 4th book of the *Æneid* in Latin, in the last case of Infinite Series in Algebra, and the 13th proposition of the 3rd book of Euclid, and am as far as the 21st chapter of the 1st book of Samuel.”

At midsummer 1820 he left Mill Hill School, and it appears from a letter to him from his mother, on the 3rd June, that she and his father were much gratified by the testimony from his masters of his industry and good conduct during his residence with them. He always cherished a true affection for the School, and spoke in after life in the warmest terms of the advantages he received from his training there. In the year 1885 he was President of the Old Millhillians Club, and put himself to considerable inconvenience to attend a Millhillian Dinner to testify his regard for his old school. In 1888 he contributed to the Mill Hill Magazine a letter containing his recollections of his school-boy days:—

“NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE, *August 1st, 1888.*

“DEAR MR FITCH,—It was after Christmas 1819 that I became a pupil of Mill Hill School. I went to London from Newcastle in His Majesty’s Mail, the quickest conveyance then on the road, the journey occupying us forty-four hours. It can now be accomplished in six. The only conveyance at that time from London to Mill Hill was a coach, which left the ‘Elder Wine House’ in Holborn at 4 or 5 o’clock in

the evening, returning in the forenoon from Mill Hill.

"The Head Master of the school was Mr Humphreys. I believe that he had at that time just entered upon his duties. He had previously been an Independent Minister in London, and had been on the committee managing the school. Besides acting as the Principal of the school, he officiated as Minister of the chapel which was connected with it. I liked him as a preacher. The masters and scholars of the school sat in the gallery of the chapel in which worship was conducted, while such of the inhabitants of the locality as chose to attend it occupied the pews below. I trust I benefited by his ministry. At all events, it was when I was at Mill Hill that I entertained the idea of dedicating myself to the Christian ministry—an idea which I have, at all events in part, carried into practice.

"The Second Classical Master was a Mr Corrie. He was an excellent classic and an excellent teacher.

"Mr Wood was the Mathematical Master, and as he resided in the House he was, in an important sense, the head of the establishment.

"The domestic management of the school was committed to the care of Miss Lees. We saw little of her, except upon a Saturday afternoon.

"We rose early in the morning, and had in winter an hour, and in summer an hour and a half, in school before breakfast. We had milk at breakfast.

"We had a pretty large playground, and at

play-hours we seldom left it. I remember well that some very fine cedars of Lebanon spread their boughs over one end of the playground. There was, I believe, a good garden attached to the school, but we were not permitted to enter it. There was, however, a plot of ground on the sides of the playground where the boys were allowed to cultivate little gardens for themselves. There was, besides, a field in which we were allowed to play cricket.

“We had prayers morning and evening, conducted either by Mr Humphreys or Mr Wood. A number of boys (ten or twelve) who had musical talents formed a choir for conducting the singing at prayers. I liked the singing of the hymns. A time also was set apart when each of us was expected to read privately a portion of Scripture each day.

“‘Character Day’ was one of the features of the school. Once a-month each class stood upon the school floor in presence of all their companions and all the masters, and the conduct of each boy during the preceding month was discussed by the various teachers who had had him in charge. This was rather a formidable proceeding to new-comers; but I am not sure that it produced much good.

“Once a-quarter a body of examiners (about four) came down from London, on behalf of the committee, to examine the school. I remember the names of only two of these gentlemen, Dr Olinthus Gregory, who examined us in Mathematics, and Mr Hughes, Baptist Minister (and originator of the British and Foreign Bible

Society), who examined us in Classics. This was a real examination. I remember Mr Hughes (on one occasion) being much dissatisfied with the state of the class of which I formed one.

"Once a-year we had what was, I believe, called 'Grand Day.' Before breaking up for our midsummer holidays the boys who had elocutionary powers were set up to recite speeches and pieces of poetry in presence of their friends and parents and all the school. All interested in the display were invited to be present, and refectious were provided for the strangers.

"The boys of the school were all, or nearly all, the sons of Nonconformist parents. We all learnt the Shorter Catechism. To the best of my recollection, there were about 120 boys in the school when I was there. My number was 113."

### CHAPTER III.

1821, J. C. B. AT GLASGOW UNIVERSITY—1822, AT EDINBURGH UNIVERSITY—OCTOBER 1823, AGAIN AT GLASGOW UNIVERSITY—1825, TAKES B.A. DEGREE AT GLASGOW AND ENTERS THE DIVINITY HALL OF THE SECESSION CHURCH—APRIL 1826, TAKES M.A. DEGREE—NOVEMBER, LICENSED AS A PREACHER BY THE PRESBYTERY OF NEWCASTLE—1830, PREACHES AT VARIOUS PLACES ON THE BORDER—APPOINTED TO PREACH IN LONDON DURING APRIL AND MAY 1831—SEPTEMBER AT ARDENTINNY, DETERMINED TO GIVE UP THE MINISTRY AND JOIN HIS FATHER IN THE SCHOOL.

IN October 1821 John Collingwood Bruce entered as a student at the University of Glasgow.

In these days athletic sports of all kinds receive so much attention at the English Universities that it is difficult to realise the sombre, not to say austere, surroundings of a student at a Scottish University in the early part of the nineteenth century. Glasgow University did not meet in the summer, so that there was no opportunity for the practice of cricket or other summer games. There was not even a University football club. There was no golf course on the College Green, no bicycles to enable the students to get away from the smoke-laden atmosphere of the large city to "green earth and open sky." There was no University boat on the river Clyde.

The students had no recreation save that of taking long walks through the crowded streets of Glasgow, and there was little to vary the dull routine of their

studies; they learned "to scorn delights and live laborious days." He entered upon his University career with the dogged determination to devote himself with assiduity to his studies and to avail himself to the utmost of the advantages the University afforded. He had no very luxurious lodgings, and was obliged to practise strict economy. He writes home on 12th October 1821 from Havannah Street, Glasgow, and says:—

"I am at present as comfortable as my separation from my home and so many dear relatives will permit. I have got a very nice lodging; it consists of a bedroom which is exclusively my own, and where I generally sit, and a drawing-room where I may sit when I choose, and where any visitor is shown. My room is on the fifth storey, which is the highest in the house. My window just fronts the clock in the College tower, and I have a view of little else than chimneys and the roofs of houses."

He attended the Humanity class of Professor Walker and the Greek class of Professor Sandford. In putting down his name at Professor Walker's he was asked his father's name, where he came from, and what denomination of Christians he belonged to. He says:—

"The last question came so unexpectedly upon me that I just got out 'Seceder,' otherwise I should have told him I was not yet determined. But I suppose it is of no consequence."

Professor Walker was reputed to be an accomplished man, a successful teacher, and a scholar



thoroughly versed in the niceties of the Latin language. His father, in a letter to him dated 7th December, says :—

“As you observe Professor Walker is so exact in his attention to the minutiae of language, I hope you will derive great benefit from him. Probably on your return you will be able to furnish some hints for improvement in teaching here. It is by following this plan that I have often been enabled to introduce improvements into my school from hints I have accidentally picked up.”

He was at this time anxious concerning his religious feelings, and he wrote home giving expression to his doubts and difficulties. In a letter dated the 15th October there is this passage :—

“I have begun to read the Bible through again, and by reading one or two chapters every morning and evening and about half a dozen on Sunday I shall go through it every year. And I hope the serious perusal of it, with previous supplication to the Throne of Grace, may be blessed to me. I also according to Mr Pringle’s advice read a few verses of the New Testament in Greek daily.”

Probably from over-exertion and anxiety he got into an enfeebled condition and became depressed. In the early part of the year 1822 he came home to recruit and assisted his father in the school.

In the summer holidays his father took a trip to Paris. He was accompanied by Mr John Gray, a bookseller in London. It was intended that his son John

Collingwood should have gone with them, and he went with his father to London. When there he conceived the idea that he was not well enough to undertake the continental journey, and he returned home by sea.

On his return home his mother, writing to her husband, says: "I know not what to do for the best; he is certainly far from strong, and we must just have patience with him, and I am sure if his life be spared he will be a comfort to us, yet we must lay our account with many anxious moments in our numerous young family; hitherto we have nothing but to be grateful for concerning them."

In the year 1890 Dr Bruce writes:—

"It is close upon sixty-eight years since these lines were written, and my life is yet spared. I trust I was enabled to help and comfort in some degree my dear departed parents, but had I my life to live over again how much more zealously and lovingly would I labour for their comfort and joy."

In the autumn of the same year he went to Edinburgh University, and there attended the second Greek and Humanity classes and the second Mathematical class. In April 1823 he paid a visit to his mother's friends, the Misses Moncrieff of Pitlour in Fife. Writing home he says:—

"I enjoy the company of the Misses Moncrieff very much. Like pilgrims in a strange country they are always fond of talking of their eternal home and the way thither."

In October 1823 he returned to Glasgow University and attended the senior Greek class of Professor

Sandford and the Logic class of Professor Jardine. On 30th December he wrote to his parents a letter from which the following are extracts :—

“ I now sit down to write a few lines, expecting that you will receive it on New Year's day. Our holidays begin to-morrow and continue till Monday ; I intend to make as much of these few days as I can, and besides getting my exercises done, to lay in a stock of exercise to serve me the rest of the session. I took a walk to Paisley a Saturday or two ago to see Mrs Farrier, who was very kind to me. I stayed all Sunday, but returned in the evening. Do you think that you could not form an Ancient Geography class after Mr Cowan's plan, so that the boys might be masters of all the places marked in the map by the examination ? I think that I could undertake the management of it myself after I come home. The maps ought to be coloured and pasted on a stiff board. If the two first Latin classes could do it, it would be well. We have got a prize exercise set in the Logic, ‘ The causes of Inattention, and the Remedies for it.’ As I do not wish to shrink from any attempt at all within my reach, I have begun it. The ‘ Inattention ’ theme has to be given in on the 1st of February, and by that time I must begin my ‘ Description.’ What do you think I at present propose as my subject ? ‘ An account of my visit to the coal-pit.’ Should you be inclined to laugh at it, it will be but fair to suggest some other. It strikes me it would be a very good one, as it will be new to the class, purely descriptive, one that I should take great

interest in, and it is within the sphere of my observation. I have made it a point to take a walk every day, wet or dry, and though I have got many a ducking, yet by never shrinking from a blast of wind or snow I have escaped all cold, whilst those around me are blistered and blooded. I dined at Mr Parker's on Christmas day. This is the only Christmas I ever spent in the absence of every relation ; many a one I may yet have to spend should I be spared. How are all friends ? Wishing them all joy and happiness."

The following session, 1824-25, he joined the Moral Philosophy class of Professor Milne, and continued his studies in Greek under Professor Sandford, and received instruction in Mathematics from a private tutor, Mr M'Grigor. In the Moral Philosophy class he received a prize for his distinguished "merit and eminence in the class." During this session his time was very fully occupied. He read Cicero and Bacon occasionally in the Moral Philosophy class, and gave a good deal of attention to Mathematics. In the morning at 7.30 he went to the Moral Philosophy class, at 10 to Mr M'Grigor for Algebra, at 11 again to the Moral Philosophy class, at 1 to Mr M'Grigor for Trigonometry, at 3 to the Greek class.

Writing home, he said he found the work of the Moral Philosophy class very hard.

In April 1825 he took the B.A. degree at Glasgow, and in August the same year he entered as a student the Divinity Hall of the Secession Church, then presided over by the Rev. John Dick, D.D., a distinguished theologian, and although somewhat wanting in sympathy, clear and incisive in his method

of teaching. Dr Bruce always spoke of him in terms of the highest respect and veneration.

It was necessary that a student who wished to be admitted to the Divinity Hall should first be examined and approved by a Presbytery of the Secession Church. His fitness to enter the Divinity Hall was certified to Dr Dick by the following letters from the Rev. J. Smith, Clerk to the Newcastle Presbytery:—

“ I beg leave to inform you that in compliance with an order of Presbytery of the 19th inst., I make the following communication : ‘ The Presbytery proceeded to the examination of Mr J. C. Bruce, with a view to his being admitted as a student of the Divinity Hall. The Presbytery examined him at considerable length upon his knowledge of the Classics and Philosophy, and declared themselves highly satisfied, and also upon his Christian knowledge and experience, and also his motives for offering himself to the study of Divinity with a view to the holy ministry. Upon which he gave perfect satisfaction, and the Presbytery unanimously agreed in recommending him to the Divinity Hall as a student.’ (Extracted from the Minutes by J. Smith.)

“ DEAR SIR,—I beg your favourable attention to Mr J. C. Bruce. He is a young man of excellent character, and the son of the respected Head Master of the first Academy of Newcastle.—I am, dear Sir, yours very affectionately,

JOHN SMITH.

NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,  
27th July 1825.”

The session of the Divinity Hall lasted only about two months, beginning in August. With the pro-

ceedings there he was much gratified; the students were all friendly and united.

In the Church of England but little attention is paid to the giving of instruction in the art of preaching, and thus it happens that while in that Church there have always been some distinguished men possessed of great gifts who have displayed the highest power in the preaching of the Gospel, the average qualification of the clergy as preachers is inferior to that of the ministers of the Presbyterian body. One reason for this is, that among the Presbyterians the greatest care is taken and a long time is devoted to the study of the art of expounding the Scriptures simply, earnestly, and effectively, so as to attract the attention of the hearers and to influence their minds and hearts.

In the Divinity Hall the principal part of the time was occupied in hearing the discourses of the students, three of whom daily delivered a discourse; the Professor, after having called upon the students to offer any remarks, if they had any to make, criticised the discourses himself. Speaking of Dr Dick, John Collingwood Bruce says:—

“I was at first very much struck with the severity of his criticisms; he certainly does not spare, but as I have become more accustomed to him it makes less impression upon me; his remarks, however, as far as I can judge, are in general very admirable and just, and I daresay we may derive more advantage from attending to them than by any other part of the business at the Hall. The professor lectures four times a-week; his lectures, I think, are very good; he

reasons very calmly, gives a clear, comprehensive view of the subject he is treating of, and never uses a word more than he can help."

He thus writes to his father on the 7th September respecting a discourse delivered by him in the Hall :—

"Of all my performances this is the one of which I am least satisfied; I fear it wants that heart and soul which you say should enter into every Scriptural discourse. If from this attempt I have learned that the aid of the Spirit is necessary for illustrating and enforcing the truths of the Gospel, it will have been a most profitable one. I have been led to think how necessary a constant heavenly-mindedness must be to the useful minister; unless his heart be in his work and his treasure in heaven, he must be one of those dry essayists you speak of; he must speak of joys he never knew, enforce obligations he never felt, and urge duties he does not perform."

In the University Session 1825-26 he attended the Mathematical and Natural Philosophy classes, and in April 1826 he took the M.A. Degree.

On 15th September 1826 he attained the age of twenty-one, and his father in writing to him on the occasion says :—

"We hope your life has been preserved for a valuable purpose, and that the talents which God has given you will be devoted to His service whether in a public or in a more private capacity. Though you have this day come of age we cannot congratulate you upon becoming an heir to an estate, or hold out any prospects of

your possessing much of this world's goods, but we sincerely pray that you may be entitled to a better and more durable inheritance. The education which you have received will, we hope, enable you to occupy a respectable place in society, and should your little brothers and sisters be by the dispensation of the Almighty deprived of their father, you must endeavour to make up the loss and supply my place."

In the University Session of 1826-27 he attended a course of lectures on Political Economy by Professor Mylne; he also attended the Surgery, Anatomy, and Hebrew classes. In after life he often spoke of the advantage gained from the knowledge acquired by his surgical and anatomical studies.

In the month of November 1826, Thomas Campbell, the poet, was elected Lord Rector of the University, and the election created considerable excitement amongst the students.

Mr Canning and Sir Thomas Brisbane were started in opposition to the poet, but Campbell was, after a sharp contest, elected by the unanimous voice of the "nations" into which the electoral body of the university is divided.

In April 1827 the new Lord Rector delivered his inaugural address. The following is the account John Collingwood Bruce gives of the ceremony in a letter to his father:—

"On Thursday last Mr Thomas Campbell and I delivered our discourses, he in the Common, and I in the Divinity Hall. He made a miserable job of his from not reading it, as I did. His commencement was very fine, but he soon



lost himself, and became dreadfully confused ; sometimes, however, he hit upon a splendid figure, which showed the genius of the man. I am in hopes that out of justice to himself and his electors he will give his manuscript to the printers. Perhaps no audience is so trying as that which meets in the Common Hall on such occasions. The place is crowded with students and persons belonging to the town, and others who choose to risk their necks and arms in forcing an entrance. Red gowns, waving hats, and eager eyes salute the speaker from every part. At his entrance he is almost deafened with cheers, and every elegant period that he utters during his speech is welcomed by a *ruff* from the young critics. The audience in former days must have been very much like what it is now. Adam Smith, when he was elected Rector, rose to make a speech, but sat down again without uttering a syllable, and Edmund Burke, when he was installed, as Dr M'Gill informs me, made a complete stick ; he uttered but one sentence, a very curious one, of about ten minutes in length. So Campbell is not the first person who has been in this awkward predicament. Some admired his speech, however, notwithstanding.

“Since you do not wish me at home before the end of the session, I will remain here till that time.

“I am glad to see that the Dissenters in England are beginning to view in their proper light the disabilities under which they labour. The Test and Corporation Acts are not so much

grievous to the Dissenters themselves as they are libellous of the religion they profess. Our forefathers did well perhaps to remain quiet for a while, to show what good and useful subjects they were, and how well affected to the Government. But we shall abuse their lengthened patience, their hard-earned triumph, if we do not rise and make their deservings and our rights the subject of never-ending appeals."

On the 30th of August 1827 his mother wrote to him :—

"You are about a sacred work and must pursue it with diligence, preparation, and prayer, and the Spirit of God will bless your endeavours.

"Your plan of being licensed appears to us good if it will not interfere with the two following sessions, but you must take the advice of those who know better than we."

In the University Session 1827-28 he again attended the Anatomy and Surgery classes, and joined the Chemistry class. At the end of the session he attended the Divinity Hall during August and September, and then went home to assist his father. He entered into the business of the school with much energy, and was entirely engrossed in the work. On 20th February. 1829, writing to his sister Frances, he says :—

"I am so completely immersed in my own affairs in school that I find it very difficult to gather together any news which will interest you at so great a distance. You will, however, be happy to hear we are all well. Father is

getting on very pleasantly in his concerns; the school is in a good state, and he has not much to harass him in that quarter."

In addition to his school duties he acted as an agent in a Home Missionary Society just established in Newcastle, and visited in his district on Wednesday evenings and on Sundays. John Bruce writes to his daughter Frances on March 30th, 1829:—

"John is also my chief gardener, and I have no doubt but that you will admire his skill when you come to see our garden at midsummer."

Early in May 1829, John Collingwood Bruce, who was then at home, had a sharp attack of fever, and was confined to bed for some time. On the 20th of May 1829 he wrote to his sister Fanny:—

"My strength is gradually returning, though slowly. I certainly was never so much debilitated in my life, but I trust I am now in a fair way by the blessing of Providence of being restored to my usual strength."

In the same letter he speaks of its being necessary to get another Latin master in the place of Mr Taylor, who was about to leave.

"My place will also have to be supplied; I should have delivered a discourse before the Presbytery last Thursday, but was in bed all day. Robert Dees has returned full of honours."

In the autumn of 1829 he went to Glasgow to complete his theological studies at the Divinity Hall.

At this time he doubted his fitness for the duties of the ministry, and thus conveys to his mother the apprehensions which agitated his mind :—

“I am a mystery to myself. I have in me a heart that is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked. Having said thus much you will doubtless say it is needless for me to add anything else or to speak of quiet comfortable seasons which I may have fancied I have enjoyed, much less speak about future prospects. Yet I cannot altogether withhold on this last subject that when I am in those frames of mind, which to say the least are most pleasant, then the idea of losing sight of the ministry is most repugnant to me. On the whole, I do not like the thought of retiring into the other sphere of usefulness which opens to my view. Not, I can assure you, because I should not take a great delight in such pursuits, or that they would exact from me a greater degree of anxiety or labour. The reverse is the case; from the little experience I have had I take pleasure in teaching, and I should delight in lightening my father of his load in some degree; nay, I often think that my duty here sides with my inclination, and I am fully convinced that the ministerial office faithfully performed is the most laborious of offices, and has anxieties greater than others. I know that by choosing the ministry I should have many worldly sacrifices to make, but with God’s grace I think I could make them.

“I have been reckoning upon leaving the Hall on the 1st of October. Will you tell me when

the Newcastle Presbytery will hold its next meeting? I think I should go forward and take license; if so, I may as well do it at once."

In October he returned home by way of Edinburgh. In the course of the journey he encountered one of those incidents which were not uncommon in the old coaching days. He wrote to his sister Fanny in October:—

"I started at 8 o'clock for Edinburgh; we had not got five miles from Glasgow before one of the leading horses began kicking and plunging in a most terrible manner. I was sitting on the box next the driver. Seeing what was likely to happen, I disburdened myself of my box-coat, and was just waiting to feel which way the coach was likely to swing over before I took the leap. The horse at length got its hind leg over the cross-bar, and of course tumbled down; the wheel-horse immediately behind necessarily fell over it, and the other wheeler came down on the top of it. Providentially the coach came to a stand without going over, though all the horses were rolling on the ground.

"All things go on here as usual. The school is doing well; never had so good and faithful set of teachers. This is a great mercy, considering father's anxious temperament.

"The Presbytery appointed me two discourses as part of my trials for license yesterday. I have begun to study pretty regularly. I have taken sole possession of my bedroom as a study, and feel very comfortable in it indeed. I resumed avocations in the Town Mission on

Sabbath in the evening; we assembled about fifty persons, whom I addressed."

On 17th November 1829, the necessary formalities having been completed to the satisfaction of the Newcastle Presbytery, he was licensed as a preacher, and thus became eligible to receive a call from any congregation of the Secession Church to become their minister.

He entered into the work of the ministry with all the enthusiasm of a young pioneer filled with the love of his native county, and imbued with the Puritan traditions which lingered about the hills and the dales of the Border. A letter to his sister on the 28th October 1829 indicates the hopeful spirit which then filled his mind. He says:—

"I do not despair of seeing Northumberland, the fairest portion of earth upon the globe, once more a Presbyterian county: a great deal of Presbyterian feeling lingers still in the western parts."

He was sent as a preacher to various Presbyterian congregations on the north and south of the Border, but there are no records extant stating exactly the congregations he visited or the time he spent at each place. Early in the year 1830 he was preaching at Sunderland, and at Rigg near Gretna Green, and at Haltwhistle in Northumberland. In March he was preaching at Catton, Northumberland, and early in April at Allendale Town. Writing from Allendale Town on the 1st of April 1830 to his mother, he says:—

"I had a very good congregation at Catton

last Sabbath. I enjoyed the services much ; my congregation seemed very attentive, and there was a good deal of rural simplicity in their appearance which interested me."

Notwithstanding that in his preaching engagements there was much to afford him gratification, he seems not to have met with the success which his ardent spirit anticipated, and in July 1830 he expressed to his mother a feeling of discouragement at his ministerial prospects. And in that month his mother wrote him a letter which contained the following passages :—

"I spoke to Mr Pringle after Divine service yesterday. He speaks very kindly of you, and thinks you have no reason to be either disheartened or impatient for the future. I see that he would like to have you settled in his own Presbytery if it were the will of Providence.

"He seems to have no doubt of your ultimate success. Your heavenly Father, my dear John, has hitherto led you by a smooth road, and through green pastures as far as the comforts of this life are concerned. He is now trying your faith and the reality of your love by bringing you under the discipline of the Covenant, and requiring you, by the inward conflict you are now experiencing, to receive Jesus not only as your Prophet and Priest, but also as your King ; and is teaching you to render that humble submission and unreserved and cheerful obedience to His righteous government in all the dispensations of His Providence that He requires of His people.

“Go on your way rejoicing through good report and through evil report. Keep your eye fixed on the cross of Christ, and in all things strive to work to His glory. Farewell, my dear John; the Lord bless you and keep you in all your ways.”

In August 1830 he was at Horsley, near Otterburn,<sup>1</sup> and he was encouraged by the success which attended his preaching there. Writing to his father on the 12th August from Yetsfield near Otterburn, he says:—

“I preached in a coach-house into which a stable entered. Both places were filled, and several stood about the wide doors and grated windows. The numbers present could not be less than 200. A great many of these had walked a distance of three or four miles, some had travelled eight or ten. It was exceedingly pleasant to witness the gathering: one after another made their appearance on the neighbouring heights, some on the farm-horse, others on foot, some young, many aged and leaning upon a staff. As the greater part were from a distance, we were obliged to have a double service without interval.

“Should the day be favourable next Sabbath our numbers will probably be much greater; perhaps we shall be obliged to take to the moors. I have not been able to visit so much as I expected, the people all being busily en-

<sup>1</sup> More than fifty years after this Dr Bruce preached at Otterburn at the opening of a new chapel, and revived the pleasant memory of his early labours.



gaged securing their hay, the only harvest which these parts yield. I am exceedingly comfortable here, and happy in my work. I have not been troubled much with thoughts of the future, though I am still of the same mind."

The expression in the above letter of the 12th August, "I am still of the same mind," implies, no doubt, that he was coming to the conclusion that it was his duty to abandon the ministry and devote himself to help his father in the work of the school. His sister Fanny strongly urged him to adopt this course ; she says—

"Our beloved father has long wrought, rising up early and toiling for the maintenance of us his children, and now it seems a matter of the greatest consequence that he should be materially relieved of the burden, and I do trust, my dear brother, that you may be divinely directed on this interesting occasion."

The following letters addressed to him at Maryport, the one by his mother and the other by his father, relate to the same question.

(From his Mother.)

"NEWCASTLE, *September 14th*, 1830.

"I am much impressed with the idea that Maryport will be a profitable station to you, as it will bring forth all your power of exertion and let you know something of the labour of weekly preparation. You must take plenty of exercise and nourishment, and keep sacred from all intrusion the time you set apart in each day

for study ; if not you will get none of your plans comfortably carried into effect.

"In answer to your other observations concerning yourself, I would exhort you in the strength of Divine Grace to cast the future unreservedly into the lap of Providence ; if you have but faith to trust all your concerns to Him, in whom you have believed and who has led you with a Shepherd's care thus far through the wilderness, even twenty-five years of your pilgrimage, He will choose for you in His good time, and not only choose but counsel and direct you to that particular path in which He would have you to glorify Him, and He will also make you willing to acquiesce in His righteous judgment."

(From his Father.)

"NEWCASTLE, *October 2nd*, 1830.

"We were glad to hear from you yesterday. Your letter arrived while Mr Browning was with us. He had come the day before from Allendale, where he had been for the last six weeks or two months. He has had great success in following you up in that station. The congregations continue crowded and increasing, often fifty or sixty standing about the door.

"As I was waiting at the 'Chevy'<sup>1</sup> for Miss Smith on her return from Scotland, I met with Mr Young of London on his way home from the Synod. I had only a short interview with him. He told me news which I do not know whether you will be glad to hear—that you are appointed

<sup>1</sup> The office of the Chevy Chase coach.

by the Synod to the London Presbytery next April and May.

"If you should, through the blessing of God, find encouragement in your own mind to continue your labours as a Christian minister, there is little doubt but that your way will soon be made clear, and that an opening will be made for you to some comfortable settlement. Mr Browning says your labours in Allendale are highly appreciated. Providence, we hope, has made use of you there in laying the foundation of a Church which may be of use to thousands yet unborn. If, however, you should resolve upon teaching, it is an honourable and a useful profession. With all the disadvantages which I had to encounter, I have reason to bless God for the success which I have had in it. Though, sensible of the many difficulties and disappointments that teachers meet with, I feel the less willing that any of you should embark in the employment.

"It will be well for us to make it a matter of prayer, to wait patiently on God, not to be too precipitate but follow the leadings of Providence."

The letter which follows is an answer to the above.

"MARYPORT, *October 11th, 1830.*

"The news respecting London has been confirmed by the appointments which I received on Saturday. I like the thought much of going to London in the spring; for some reasons I would have preferred going immediately, but the May Meetings, Parliament, &c., alleviate the disappointment.

"I confess I was inclined to rebel at the other

appointment which has been assigned me (Carlisle Presbytery, December and January). I suppose I shall be where I am during these two months, and shall have to travel home in the interval. Four long months in one place at the rate of five discourses a-week will try my metal."

The following letters, the first to his brother Edward and the second to his mother, give an account of some of the difficulties and inconveniences which at that time attended the life of a travelling preacher.

The first of these letters is also interesting as containing a reference to the Roman Wall, a subject which in after life largely occupied his attention and with which his name is inseparably associated.

*"November 6th, 1830.*  
Rigg (nr. GREYNA GREEN),  
DUMFRIESSHIRE.

"After a somewhat troublesome journey I arrived at my present place of abode last night. I left Maryport on my journey to Skinburness before daybreak on Thursday, but on arriving at the latter place, after a walk of fifteen miles, found that the weather forbade all attempts at crossing the Solway there. My only alternative was to trudge fifteen miles further round, by way of Abbey and Kirkbride to Bowness. I encountered a good many pelting showers of rain and hail on my road. I heard thunder on first starting in the morning, but I am thankful to say the storm did not fairly break out until I was entering Bowness, where I took shelter for the night. Next morning I surveyed the remains of the Roman Wall, which terminates here, and

the canal mouth, and then put myself under the care of a guide, whose business it is to conduct passengers over the water. We crossed in a cart at dead low water. The stream was about half a mile broad. It ran with fearful impetuosity, being much swollen with the rain. Just as we landed on the Scottish side the chain which suspends the cart over the horses' back snapped. Had this happened when we were in the middle of the stream I feel certain that life would have been lost. There were three others in the cart besides myself. I would not, excepting in a case of urgent necessity, cross the water again in like circumstances. When the tide is in, the Firth is about two miles broad. The quicksands prevented us crossing directly to Annan. We joined the turnpike road about two and a quarter miles to the east of it. I dined with Mr Dobbie at Annan, and in the course of the evening I and my plaid and my weary bundle arrived in the midst of a soaking rain at the *Rigg*, where I met with a hearty welcome from my landlady and two or three of the leaders of the good cause here.

"Matters seem to be in a very interesting state, and I hope to be able to enter upon my work with spirit and delight. My lodgings are likely, I think, to prove very comfortable; I cannot expect very luxurious fare; 10s. per week is my landlady's remuneration."

"Rigg, November 13th, 1830.

"Yesterday morning after breakfast the portmanteau arrived; I did not open it till the most

of my day's work was over for fear of having my thoughts too much interrupted; your letter and the other contents were very welcome. I did not expect such an abundant supply of clothing, but I dare say I shall be able to make use of most of the things you have sent. A preacher's life is a pretty hard one, especially during the winter months,—our dwellings do not always exclude the storm in the most complete manner.

"I am a person of great importance here, and many a conversation do I hear respecting myself in the kitchen, being obliged to keep the door partially open which separates the 'ben' which I occupy from the 'but,' to prevent smoke, in this little thatched cottage. I am thankful that I keep perfectly free from cold, though my stomach rebels a little at every change of diet. I have been a good deal occupied since I came here in calling upon the supporters of the congregation. They take it as an act of great kindness. My interest in the station increases. Many an aged and infirm person, and persons with families, rejoice in having the Gospel brought to them; they could not travel far to it."

In December his appointment at Rigg came to an end, and on the whole it had been a pleasant one. He was favourably impressed with it from the first, and a great deal of marked respect and kindness were shown to him. He endeavoured to see the people not merely on Sundays, but looked in upon them in their cottages as often as he could, and thus a mutual attachment had been established, and he felt unable to resist the entreaties of the people to return

to them. Writing to his mother on 1st December 1830, he says:—

“I know you will be disappointed at my thus a second time deferring my visit home, but I am sure of this, that had you heard the burst of thanksgiving which last night came warm from the heart of a poor widow who, unassisted, has struggled through the last few years with eight little children, when I told her my intention to return in February, you would not for a moment have doubted the propriety of my resolution.

“I have not said much to you lately respecting future plans, chiefly because present duties have for the most part occupied my attention.”

In December and January he was at Maryport. He writes home on 6th January 1831:—

“If ever I have felt any of the power of religion, and enjoyed any measure of the peace of God which passeth understanding, it has been here. I think I have felt more than ever lately the responsibility of the ministerial office.

“How often have I longed for the peaceful retirement of my own study. I am exposed to many interruptions; the front-door of this house enters directly into this room where I sit all day; and that poor maniac Thomas Archer is at present in the house.

“I have enjoyed excellent health. My fingers were the only sufferers during the cold weather. The frost has again returned, but not with great severity.”

Early in February 1831 he went home and assisted

his father in the school, remaining there until after the family celebration of his mother's birthday on the 24th of March, and going at the end of March to London to fulfil his preaching engagements.

On the 4th of April 1831 he wrote home to his father from Golden Square, London. He says :—

“Yesterday I had a tolerably hard day's work of it. I was rather timid standing forth in the presence of so many metropolitan critics. I gave Hebrews 13th, 20, 21, and John 1st, 29, at Oxendon morning and afternoon, and Hebrews 13th at Wells Street in the evening. The congregations at Oxendon were really very good. I believe that several who heard me did so with some degree of genealogical interest.

“I have been moving about a little since I came here; I have visited the tunnel which extends half-way under the Thames. I have also been in Newgate. There were about thirty prisoners under sentence of death in the press-room: amongst them I observed a boy not above 12 years of age.”

His mother was of course deeply interested in his account of his preaching in London in the old chapel where her father and her family had attended.

His letter revived the memory of her youthful days, and she thus expressed her feelings in a letter to him dated 11th April 1831 :—

“NEWCASTLE.

“We received your letter with much delight, for many weary thoughts we had had about you after you left us.



“I am sure if the spirits of departed saints and relatives be permitted to hover around their earthly descendants, you have many glorified spectators witnessing and rejoicing over your present ministrations. My mind, as you may suppose, is much with you on the Sabbath, and I could not help imagining the pew on the left side of the pulpit surrounded by my dear departed parents and sisters, as in years that are past, all in their characteristic attitudes and attire, listening with deep and painful interest to their young descendant. This afforded me a sweet, though at the same time sad, subject of contemplation. Miss Grey most good-naturedly wrote a few lines, and told us what a favourable impression the first Sabbath had made on them all; it would no doubt be a day of strong excitement to your feelings, and make Monday a more languid day than usual.”

He remained in London two months, fully engaged in ministerial work.

As we have seen, he was devoted to his native county, Northumberland. He never regarded himself as a Scotsman, and he was not altogether in sympathy with the Scottish character.

In 1831 the Presbyterian body had very few churches in England. At that time they had only one or two churches in London; no attempt had been made to plant Presbyterian churches in the large towns of England, and except in London and the Border counties there was little or no opening for a minister among the English congregations.

He had for long been revolving in his mind the

question whether he should continue his career as a minister or whether he should devote himself to help his father in his school. In September 1831 he finally made up his mind that his duty was to abandon the ministry and follow his father's profession.

A letter written from Ardentinnny on September 6th, 1831, to his mother, expresses his views on the subject. He says:—

“I am back again once more to my peaceful retreat in Glenfinnart, which is hard by Ardentinnny. I remain here next week also, and probably shall continue here till the close of the month.

“After revolving in my mind that which has long been the burden of my thoughts, I have come to the conclusion that it would be as well for me to relinquish my present pursuits with the present appointments. A multitude of reasons urge me to take this course. I have been feeling my way hitherto; each step that I have taken has been taken almost in the dark, but in the expectation that my way would soon be made clear. Now I cannot say that it has yet been made clear. In looking forward to the ministry I have always had a view to England. I do not suppose I am under the influence of strong national prejudices, but still my leanings are towards my native land, and I think I could be more useful in the ministry (other things being equal) there than a Scotchman, or than I could be on this side of the Border. The indications on this subject have been very decisive. There are no openings for me in England,

and as to Scotland there are many better qualified to fill them than I am. For these and many other reasons I think it right to turn my attention to that other opening which God in His kind providence has kept in reserve for me. This is a sphere of usefulness in which, if He give me a single eye to His glory, much may be done for His praise.

“I told the secretary of the Glasgow Home Missionary Society not to reckon upon me for October, as I did not know how I might be engaged; so, should your views and my dear father’s not differ from mine upon this subject, I might turn my face southwards in the first or second week of October.”

His parents’ views according with his own, he carried out the intention expressed in the last letter and settled at home in the month of October, and devoted himself to assisting his father in the school. Although this decision was arrived at after much doubt and searching of heart, events proved it was a wise determination.

He never regretted his decision or entertained the slightest doubt that he had chosen the right course. Writing in 1890, about sixty years after, he says :—

“I have felt all along, and I feel now, that I was right in giving myself professedly to school work. It seemed a pity to throw away the opening for my future maintenance which a partnership with my father presented to me; and above all the hope that by taking this step I might lighten his labours and anxieties in his later years was an all-powerful inducement. I

am thankful I took the step: my father was helped, and after his death I was enabled by the income from the school greatly to aid my widowed mother."

Speaking at the Jubilee Dinner of the Percy Street Academy, held on the 6th of November 1855, Dr Bruce said:—

"My father was at first unwilling that I should devote myself to the scholastic profession. But he allowed me to pursue a course of study which would alike fit me for the discharge of the duties of the holy ministry and those of a teacher of youth. Seven years of my life were spent in the halls of that University which a year or two ago was pleased to bestow upon me a token of their approbation. In due time I made up my mind as to what was the path of duty, and joined my father in the management of the school. I have never for an instant repented of my choice or doubted that I misinterpreted the leadings of Providence."

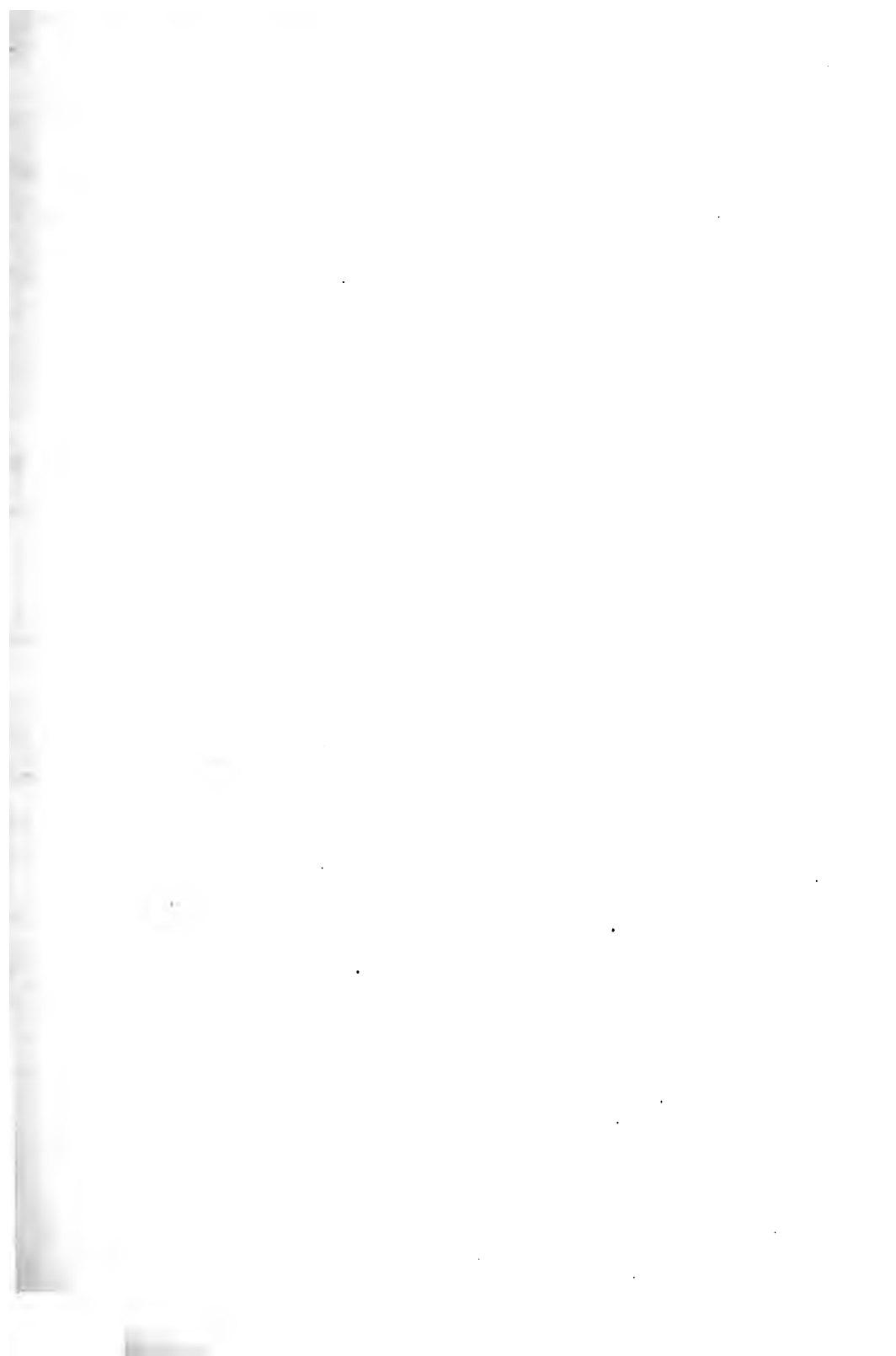
It has been thought well to make quotations at some length from the letters written during the period when Dr Bruce acted as a licensed preacher of the Presbyterian Church, because the experience gained by him during that time had a lasting influence upon his character, and fitted him not only as a teacher of youth but also endowed him with the power of ministration which he exercised in various ways with great acceptance and success. Among the congregations to which he ministered on the Border were some that dated from the time of the Act of







*Fore Hall Staircase*





Uniformity. Many of the members of these congregations were plain simple men of deep religious fervour, who did not foster the spirit of contention which is sometimes found among modern Nonconformists, and he often spoke with pleasure of his intercourse with the hard-headed Borderers who found more dignity and reverence in the simpler forms of worship than in elaborate ritual.

## CHAPTER IV.

1831, J. C. BRUCE TAKEN INTO PARTNERSHIP BY HIS FATHER—OCT. 1834, DEATH OF HIS FATHER—OUTLINE OF SYSTEM OF EDUCATION PURSUED — LETTER FROM MR ROBERT STEPHENSON—PRACTICE OF MENTAL ARITHMETIC IN THE SCHOOL—1845, EDITS TENTH EDITION OF BRUCE'S GEOGRAPHY—1848, PUBLISHES HAND-BOOK OF ENGLISH HISTORY—LECTURE ON BEST MEANS OF PROMOTING THE MORAL IMPROVEMENT OF YOUTH—RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION IN THE SCHOOL—FRIDAY AFTER-NOON BIBLE-CLASS—PRINTED OUTLINES OF THE LECTURES ON THE EVIDENCES OF CHRISTIANITY—SPEECH BY SIR WEMYSS REID—ANNUAL PUBLIC EXAMINATION—1836, PRESENTATION BY SCHOLARS OF SILVER CUP AND SALVER—1843, SCHOOLROOM REBUILT—1858, OXFORD LOCAL EXAMINATION—JUBILEE DINNER—RETIREMENT OF DR BRUCE FROM THE SCHOOL—SILVER SALVER GIVEN BY HIS MOTHER.

At the close of the year 1831, John Collingwood Bruce was taken by his father into partnership. The school, which had been established in 1802 by John and Edward Bruce, had since 1806, when Edward Bruce died, been carried on under the sole management of John Bruce with the help of assistant tutors. John Collingwood had occasionally given assistance to his father, but it was only during the times of the recess between the college sessions that he was able to render such help.

By the unremitting and strenuous exertions of John Bruce, the Percy Street School had become an important and flourishing institution, but he, being now in his fifty-sixth year, was beginning to feel the labour of his profession telling on his strength, and his son brought most efficient assistance to him in the man-

agement of the school. His son had acquired, as we have seen, by a long course of training, not only a rich store of knowledge, but had been brought into contact with men of varied pursuits and character, and so had gained an experience and knowledge of the world invaluable to a teacher of youth. He possessed in a very remarkable degree the faculty of imparting information in a manner at once attractive and engaging. From the time of his joining the school he threw his whole energy into the work, and greatly added to its reputation and usefulness. The following is a copy of the circular which was issued to the public on the occasion of his entering into partnership with his father:—

“Mr Bruce, gratefully impressed with a sense of the favours conferred upon him during the time which he has had the honour of teaching in Newcastle, takes this opportunity of expressing his great obligation to his friends, and has much satisfaction in informing them and the public that he has now united with himself, in the superintendence of his academy, his son, John Collingwood Bruce, A.M., by whose assistance, and that of other able instructors, the business of the academy will continue to be conducted. Mr Bruce, anxious for the improvement of his pupils, hopes by the plan which he has now adopted to be able to add to the branches of education usually taught in classical and mathematical schools, instruction in logic, natural and moral philosophy, and chemistry.”

While the business prospects of the school were in the highest degree satisfactory, and John Bruce was

rejoicing in the comparative freedom from exertion which the assistance of his son enabled him to enjoy, a severe trial befell the family in the sudden death of Frances, the eldest daughter, who was stricken down with an attack of typhus fever, and died at Glasgow, in the twenty-third year of her age, on the 1st April 1832. She was an exceedingly sweet and interesting personality, greatly beloved by all who knew her.

The partnership so happily inaugurated was not destined to be enduring. On the 31st October 1834 John Bruce died after a short illness.<sup>1</sup> His sudden and unexpected death came as a great shock to his family and his many friends in Newcastle. In 'The Memorials of John and Mary Bruce' some account is given of the many tributes of respect paid to his memory. But here, in endeavouring to trace the life of his son, we cannot dwell upon the many testimonies to the noble character of the father. By his death the whole responsibility of the management of the school devolved upon John Collingwood Bruce, and for a period of twenty-five years he guided its development with remarkable success. He fully maintained the high character of the school, and raised its efficiency to a standard rarely attained by a private institution.

The 'Northern Examiner,' in an article published 4th January 1856, speaking of Dr Bruce, says :—

“He was intended for the Church, and his studies were consequently directed to Divinity; but he eventually chose his present profession, and joined his father in conducting the academy. In this position his extensive information and

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter I.

refined taste have been brought into active operation, and the character of the seminary has been elevated in a most extraordinary degree by his labours."

The following are extracts from "An Outline of the System of Education pursued in the Percy Street Academy," issued by John Collingwood Bruce shortly after the sole management of the school devolved upon him :—

"In the Second Division the pupil pursues the study of English grammar, geography, and history, and completes a course of practical arithmetic, and acquires facility in mental calculation. In the English Department the etymology of the language is carefully studied as an important means of acquiring the correct orthography and accurate meaning of words. English composition is practised. Book-keeping, by single and double entry, forms the concluding part of the pupil's duties in arithmetic.

"SENIOR DEPARTMENT. — In Classics, those Greek and Latin authors that are used in the upper classes of public schools and colleges are read, and composition in both languages is much practised.

"In Mathematics, those parts that bear more immediately upon practical utility, and those also which conduce to the development of the mental faculty, are successively presented to the student.

"The French and German languages are taught by well-qualified masters, natives of the respective countries.

"Such is an outline of the general system pursued. It is respectfully suggested that the object of a liberal education is not only to make the youth a successful man of business, but so to cultivate the moral and intellectual powers that he may be an intelligent and honourable and useful member of general society; hence, while especial reference is had to those pursuits which will be more immediately useful in his intended profession, other branches may at the same time be prosecuted with much ultimate advantage.

"The religious instruction of the pupil is, in all the departments, made an object of primary importance, a careful examination of the Scriptures and of the evidences of revealed religion forming a regular part of school duty."

At first he himself taught the Greek and Latin senior classes, but as the number of scholars increased, and the duty of superintending the school became more onerous, he gave up that work to Mr John Garven, who in 1834 had come into the school as classical tutor. Mr Garven was a finished classical scholar. He remained in the school during the whole time that Dr Bruce was connected with it, and his gentle and unassuming manners endeared him to his pupils. The mathematical course was left mainly to a master. In this department Dr Bruce was always careful to secure an accomplished mathematician. The teaching was kept up to a high standard, and the following letter from Mr Robert Stephenson, the distinguished engineer, bears testimony to its uniform excellence :—

"LONDON AND BIRMINGHAM RAILWAY ENGINEERS' OFFICE,  
ST JOHN'S WOOD, 26th May 1836.

"MY DEAR SIR,—It was my intention, after having witnessed and taken part in an examination of your first mathematical class, to have written to you for the purpose of expressing how much I was pleased at the prompt and clear manner in which that class answered the questions put them both by the mathematical teacher and myself, but my engagements have prevented me doing so until now.

"After the class had proceeded through their examination, I put some questions which were likely to be out of the general routine of such examinations. These were answered in a very satisfactory manner, and proved clearly that the system of teaching this department of science adopted in your establishment is well calculated to ground the pupils in the principles as they proceed, and consequently avoid the too common error of teaching youth the mere formal use of scientific signs and symbols without being sufficiently acquainted with the principles upon which their use depends.

"By following up the system you have adopted I have no doubt many of your mathematical pupils will hereafter reflect credit upon your establishment, for the success of which you have the best wishes of  
Yours sincerely,

"ROBERT STEPHENSON.

"REV. JOHN C. BRUCE, M.A.,  
Percy Street, Newcastle-upon-Tyne."

The practice of mental arithmetic was carried to great perfection in the school. A book of rules was

printed with the view to facilitate mental calculations, which the boys were taught, and by the application of these rules they were enabled to answer questions in arithmetic with astonishing rapidity and accuracy.

At the annual examination of the school the examination of the mental arithmetic class was always an interesting feature. Complicated questions were often answered, to the astonishment of the audience, almost instantly.

Another distinguishing feature was the course of lectures delivered by Dr Bruce on natural philosophy, chemistry, and natural history. The lectures were admirably illustrated by diagrams and experiments, and the interest of the boys in the class was always maintained; and many a boy who afterwards gained distinction in the scientific world had his interest in science first aroused by the lectures in the Percy Street Academy.

There is a passage in a lecture delivered by him in May 1847, before the Teachers' Society of the North of England, "On the best means of Promoting the Moral Improvement of Youth," which shows the importance he attached to teaching of this character.—

"We shall do our pupils an incalculable service if we can teach them to watch with interest the varying phases of the seasons, to observe the multiplicity of plants which clothe the ground, to study the numerous tribes of living things which fill the air, the earth, and sea, to make the ever-varying colours of the sky an object of interest, to account the breath of heaven a luxury, to drink it in amidst the open fields with an ardour which betokens every inspiration to be an influx



of joy. In short, if we can succeed in making our pupils admirers and lovers of nature, and in inducing them patiently to try quietly the invigorating influence of those luxuries which God Himself has provided for them, the more potent but exhausting stimulants of the tavern, the billiard-table, the theatre, and the racecourse, which prove such fertile sources of misery to many of our young men in the outset of life, will have but feeble attractions."

'The Introduction to Geography and Astronomy,' published in 1803, by Edward and John Bruce, had gone through nine editions, and in 1845 John Collingwood Bruce was called upon to edit a tenth edition of the work, to which he made considerable additions. Numerous notices of interesting facts in history, biography, botany, and zoology were inserted with the view of exciting the attention of the youthful pupil and suggesting to the teacher profitable subjects of oral instruction. Important additions were made in the department of descriptive astronomy. Notices of the nebulae, double-stars, and comets were inserted, together with other valuable matter, which did not appear in former editions. An epitome of ancient geography, as copious as the limits of the work would allow, was added to this edition. The book proved a most valuable work for assisting the teacher, and it was regularly used in the Percy Street Academy and in many other schools of high reputation.

The knowledge of history, especially that of England, John Collingwood Bruce regarded as an important part of education, and in many ways he sought to render the teaching of history attractive.

He endeavoured to associate in the minds of his pupils the remains of ancient buildings with the historical events connected with them. And so he made the Castle of Newcastle and other venerable buildings situated in the Border country, and known to his pupils, tell the story of their time, the sieges they had sustained and the battles that were waged around them. History he regarded not as a mere catalogue of names and dates, but, as he expressed it in the lecture before mentioned, as a means of moral culture.—

“History,” he said, “is the record of the world’s experience, history is the development of man’s character and of the manner in which God overrules the deep-laid schemes of mortal man.”

At the Jubilee Dinner, Dr Bruce in this connection said—

He had been tempted of late to dive into studies of bygone times. To this he had been led in his capacity as a teacher. If a schoolmaster made himself a mere mill-horse, if he contented himself with the mere daily routine of duties, he would become lifeless, inanimate, and comparatively useless. Schoolmasters must not let their minds stagnate. If they lost freshness they lost vigour. During fifteen years he never read a book that would not be directly useful in school. All his reading, whether historical, scientific, or religious, had this end in view. During the whole of that time his own eyes and brains were little less than a filter. He was acting the part of a hen preparing food for her chickens, food for somewhat tender apprehensions and tastes.

Thus his private studies and school teaching had been identical.

In the year 1848 he published a handbook of English history for the use of schools. The book contained an epitome of the annals of the nation, and a series of questions upon each period. Of the two parts of which the work consisted, the series of questions he deemed by far the most important. The epitome which preceded each dynasty was prepared solely with the view of enabling the pupil readily to procure succinct answers to the questions which followed. The book had an extensive sale, and it passed through four editions. In the fourth edition the epitome was brought down to the year 1861.

In the outline of the system of instruction pursued in the school quoted above, it is stated that religious instruction was made an object of primary importance. In the lecture on "The best Means of Promoting the Moral Improvement of Youth" there is this passage—

"I give as a last advice the most important of all: let all your instructions be founded upon the revealed word of God, and enforce all your directions by motives thence deduced. I am of opinion that in practice you cannot separate religious from secular training. The Bible is the only perfect code of morality, and so plainly is it written that it may be read by all. I cannot conceive of cruelty more refined than to send a youth into the world, amidst all its snares and allurements, unenlightened and unfortified by the instructions of the Word of God.

"I know the delicacy of the ground on which

I am treading, but I do trust that what I say approves itself to the minds of all I now address. There are portions of revealed truth that are variously interpreted by different sections of the Christian community. There is no need for verging upon debatable ground. Respecting the broad truths of Scripture testimony there ought to be no dispute, and it is these which act upon the susceptibilities of the youthful heart with the most cogency."

The same view is expressed somewhat more forcibly in a memorandum found among Dr Bruce's papers, which apparently forms notes for a speech on some occasion.

"One objection will be made to these remarks, — secular instruction is the business of the teacher; religious is the work of the parent.

"There is some truth but much error in this distinction. For the most part parents, however well informed themselves, have not the time, the spare energy, the patience, and, more than all, the tact to teach the young. If professional assistance be necessary to communicate knowledge upon common subjects, I don't see why it should be declined upon religious. Besides, religion is a thing that, if real, pervades every thought, every sentiment, every act of the man. It goes with him not to church merely, but to the shop, the counting-house, the market, the place of social entertainment. Why should it be banished from the schoolroom? Why should we fail to instruct our pupils in the solemn truth that a profession which does not pervade the life is hypocrisy. The hopes of England in a large

measure depend upon the exertions of our Christian schoolmasters."

The principles thus laid down were firmly fixed in his mind, and on the 15th February 1880 he delivered a lecture before the Young Men's Christian Association of Newcastle on the subject—"How the teacher could best communicate religious instruction to the young people in his charge." In this lecture he dwelt upon the importance of inculcating right principles as the very foundation of all true education, and contended that Scripture is the only standard of right. With regard to exciting interest in the mind of the pupil he pointed out

"that happily in the Scriptures there is so much variety, so much beauty, so much pathos, such vivid descriptions of scenery, so many allusions to manners and customs different to our own, that very little art is requisite to engage the lively imagination of the young."

These principles were carried out in the school. On Friday afternoon the whole school attended what was known as the Bible-class. On these occasions Dr Bruce read and expounded some passages of the Bible or lectured on the evidences of Christianity. He was singularly happy in this kind of teaching, and there were few in the school who did not feel deeply interested in these addresses; no sectarian differences were ever dwelt upon.

In the year 1834 he printed for the use of his pupils 'Outlines of his Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity.' The preface is as follows:—

"The following pages contain an outline of the lectures which are periodically given to the pupils

“He would like to say something, however briefly, about the Friday afternoon addresses which Dr Bruce was in the habit of delivering in the writing-room. Could they not all see the tall spare figure of the Doctor as he walked up the room with his Bible under his arm, and a look of more than common seriousness upon his face? Those addresses were not sermons; in his opinion they were something very much better. They were simple talks with the boys, founded sometimes upon a passage in the Scriptures, sometimes upon some event that had just stirred the public mind, and often upon the duties of everyday life. But always they were addresses that strove to lift their school-boy hearts to a higher plane of thought than that of ordinary school-life. The Doctor strove to make them honourable and manly, with a full sense of their responsibilities and duties, and a true insight into those laws of life which make for an honourable and useful manhood. Once, he remembered, that he committed what, from the school-boy's point of view, was the unpardonable sin of crying during one of these addresses. He had just lost his earliest play-fellow and friend, who was his school-fellow also, Thomas Hogg, a boy of thirteen. His heart was full of this, his first bereavement, and suddenly, whilst he was listening to the Doctor, he heard him refer to Tom Hogg; and his words were so full of gentle sympathy that he could not keep back the rush of unbidden tears to his eyes. He was sure that, as they looked back, they must all feel what a good thing it was that they had such a school-

master as this in their most impressionable years."

A feature of the school was the Annual Public Examination, held in the school-room on the day of breaking-up for the summer holidays, which has already been referred to in Chapter I.

Programmes of the order of these examinations were printed for the use of the scholars and visitors. One of these, dated June 1837, is reproduced here.

THE ANNUAL  
PUBLIC EXAMINATION  
OF  
THE PUPILS  
IN  
MR BRUCE'S ACADEMY,  
PERCY STREET, NEWCASTLE,  
WILL TAKE PLACE  
ON THURSDAY, JUNE 15, 1837,  
COMMENCING AT TEN O'CLOCK PRECISELY.

---

*The following Classes are prepared for Examination on their respective subjects:—*

JUNIOR READING CLASS.

Scripture History.

THIRD ARITHMETIC CLASS.

Rule of Three—Practice—Fractions.

FIFTH LATIN CLASS.

Ovid.

SECOND MENTAL ARITHMETIC CLASS.

FIRST ENGLISH GRAMMAR CLASS.

The whole of Murray's Exercises—Parsing.

E

## THIRD GEOGRAPHY CLASS.

British Isles.

## THIRD LATIN CLASS.

Virgil.

## FIRST AND SECOND MATHEMATICAL CLASSES.

Conic Sections—Mechanics—Six Books of Euclid.

## FIFTH GEOGRAPHY CLASS.

Palestine.

## SCIENTIFIC CLASS.

Chemistry—Geology.

## FIRST MENTAL ARITHMETIC CLASS.

Competition for the Prize.

## FOURTH LATIN CLASS.

Cæsar.

## EVIDENCES OF CHRISTIANITY CLASS.

The Argument from Prophecy—the Rapid Propagation of Christianity—  
Internal and Experimental Evidences—Translations of the Scriptures.

## GERMAN CLASS.

Grammar to the end of the Irregular Verbs—Deutsches Lesebuch,  
Part 1st.

## SECOND GEOGRAPHY CLASS.

The States and Commerce of Europe—Ancient History.

## ALGEBRA CLASS.

Algebra to the End of Quadratic Equations.

## FIRST GREEK CLASS.

Herodotus.

## FRENCH CLASSES.

*Recitations.*

1st—A Scene between Agamemnon and Achilles, from Racine's  
Tragedy of "Iphigénie."

2nd—A Scene from Molière's "L'Avare."

3rd—"L'Etranger," a Proverbe Dramatique, by Carmontelle.

## SECOND ARITHMETIC CLASS.

Vulgar and Decimal Fractions—Interest.

## FIRST LATIN CLASS.

Livy—Horace.

## THIRD MATHEMATICAL CLASS.

First and Second Books of Euclid.

## FOURTH GEOGRAPHY CLASS.

America.



## SECOND ENGLISH GRAMMAR CLASS.

The Grammar to the End of Syntax—Exercises.

## SIXTH LATIN CLASS.

Grammar—Phædrus' Fables.

## SECOND GREEK CLASS.

Homer.

## FOURTH MENTAL ARITHMETIC CLASS.

## SECOND LATIN CLASS.

Horace—Cicero.

## FOURTH ARITHMETIC CLASS.

The Compound Rules—The Rule of Three.

## THIRD ENGLISH GRAMMAR CLASS.

## FIRST GEOGRAPHY CLASS.

Asia.

## MENSURATION CLASS.

Mensuration of Superficies and Solids.

At Half-past Two o'clock the Young Gentlemen of the First Geography Class will engage in a Debate on the Question—"Did the advantages resulting from the invasion of Britain by the Romans compensate for the evils which attended it?"

*At Four o'clock the Distribution of Prizes will take place.*

A scene from a French play was generally acted by the boys, who entered into the performance with much spirit.

An addition to the interest of the examination was made by Dr Bruce by the introduction of a debate on some historical question. He conceived that something less formal than the ordinary recitations from standard authors would be useful in teaching the boys elocution, and that by engaging in discussions of this kind their attention would be prominently directed to the question in debate. He wrote the debate himself, which consisted of an introductory speech by a boy who took the position of chairman, and four or five short speeches on either side, which were

learnt by heart and delivered by the boys appointed to conduct the debate. These debates, carried on by the boys after a parliamentary manner, created much interest and amusement, and made a pleasant change in the more serious business of the examination of the classes. The debate for 1837, as may be seen from the programme, was on the question, "Did the advantages resulting from the invasion of Britain by the Romans compensate for the evils which attended it?"

Nearly a score of these debates remain in manuscript. Among the questions were the following:—

"Watt or Wellington?"

"Did the British do right in interfering with the French Revolution?"

"Has Saxon England ever been conquered?"

"Were the victories of Edward III. worth the price they cost?"

"Was Edward I. justified in invading Scotland?"

"Was Henry VIII. a tyrant?"

"Was Mary, Princess of Orange, justified in accepting her father's throne?"

"Was Becket a traitor?"

"Were the French or the English more to blame for the death of Joan of Arc?"

"Were the Crusades beneficial or injurious to society?"

"Is the glory of the successful warrior or of the scientific discoverer to be preferred?"

The examination concluded latterly with a school-song, for which the music was composed by Thomas Ions, Mus. Doc., the organist of St Nicholas. The words have no great merit as a poem, but when sung

heartily by a large number of voices the effect was pleasing. As many of the old boys may be glad to be reminded of the song, the words are given here.

## SCHOOL-SONG.

*Work, my boys, work.*

Labour's ordained of heav'n,  
Nought without pains is giv'n.  
Work, my boys, work.

Complaining galls us more  
Than the toil we deplore.  
Work, my boys, work.

Labour is hon'able,  
Sloth's mean and despicable.  
Work, my boys, work.

Temptation to avoid,  
'Tis best to be employ'd.  
Work, my boys, work.

Labour brings happiness,  
Peace, wealth, and healthiness.  
Work, my boys, work.

Sweet's the repose that's giv'n  
To those who've nobly striv'n.  
Work, my boys, work.

Another song, called the "Midsummer Breaking-up Song," was sometimes used, but "Work, my boys, work," was generally preferred.

Drawing was taught in the school by Mr Henry Perlee Parker, an artist of considerable merit. His best known picture is the "Greenwich Pensioner reading an account of the battle of Waterloo." Mr Parker was fond of marine subjects, and had many stories to tell about smugglers, which greatly delighted the boys. He was succeeded by Mr T. M.

Richardson, a most distinguished artist, whose best works rank very high in the English Water-Colour School. When Mr T. M. Richardson retired, the teaching was carried on first by Mr T. M. Richardson, jun., who afterwards became a member of the Old Water-Colour Society, then by Mr Edward Richardson, and afterwards by Mr Henry Richardson, all sons of Mr T. M. Richardson. Mr Henry Richardson was an artist of great talent, with a conspicuous facility in sketching rapidly and accurately. He painted a large number of beautiful water-colour sketches which were used by Dr Bruce to illustrate his lectures on the Roman Wall, and lithographs from them served as illustrations to the book on the Roman Wall.

On the examination day the walls of the front parlour of the house in Percy Street were covered with drawings of the pupils in pencil, sepia, or water-colours, and they generally made a creditable display.

As the school began work after the summer holidays early in August, and there were no regular holidays until Christmas, the autumn half was a long one, and it was usual for Dr Bruce to take the whole school to some place of interest in the north of England. Sometimes they went to Durham or Hexham, sometimes to Carlisle, and once they went to York. Latterly, expeditions to various parts of the Roman Wall were frequent.

He never failed to interest his pupils in the account he gave them of the history of the old churches or of the Roman remains they visited. And so these excursions were made not only pleasurable but highly instructive.

One more quotation must be made from the

lecture "On the best means of promoting the Moral Improvement of Youth."

"The principle which is more actively at work in our schools than any other is sympathy. A new-comer receives the law not so much from the lips of his master as from the looks and demeanour of his school-fellows. Restraint is willingly submitted to, and energies readily put forth, without one word of authority, when the expressive example of all around proclaims that thus it must be. In this way the whole school is moulded after the master's own mind.

"In exhorting the instructor of youth to cultivate his own virtues, I would have him to take a high standard of morality. Aim as high as we may, we shall in reality be low enough. A perfect schoolmaster, did such a person exist, may be styled a perfect Christian gentleman. He is a man of integrity and honour; a man who shrinks with instinctive dread from whatever is unjust and unkind; a man whose actions, whose words, and whose very gestures are under the guidance of religious principles; a man whose bearing is expressive of truth and rectitude, whose person is, as it were, invested with an atmosphere of purity. Agreeably to the etymology of the word, I reckon manners a part of morality. Virtue, to be genuine, need not be stern; nay, gentleness from a man who has command of himself will tell with incomparably more effect upon a conscience-stricken delinquent than a whole cataract of the strongest epithets from the swollen cheeks of another."

This passage illustrates the principles upon which Dr Bruce endeavoured to act in his duties as a school-master. His great power in creating sympathy between himself and his pupils, his gentle bearing, his perfect manners, and his high moral tone marked him out as a successful teacher of youth.

He devoted his whole thought and energy to the management of the school, which increased in numbers year by year until the pupils numbered 225, of whom 35 were boarders. During his early days of the management all went smoothly and well, and there is little to record.

In August 1836 the scholars presented him with a handsome silver cup and salver. The cup bore the following inscription :—

Presented to the

REV. JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, A.M.,

BY THE

PUPILS OF HIS ACADEMY,

AS A MARK OF THEIR RESPECT AND ESTEEM.

31ST AUG. 1836.

Master Matthew Proctor, on behalf of the scholars, presented the cup and salver, and in the course of his address said that their object was to express the love and respect which the pupils cherished towards their master, who replied :—

“My young friends, I did not need at your hands such a testimony to assure me of your attachment. The uniform character of your demeanour towards me, the general excellence of your conduct, the alacrity, cheerfulness, and zeal

with which you engage in your daily pursuits, are substantial proofs that you regard me as a friend rather than a taskmaster. For this valuable and unexpected token of the kindness of your feelings I thank you. I shall not multiply words, for I am sincere. Amongst the most cherished of my possessions, I enjoy by inheritance a memorial presented a few years ago to my father by his grateful pupils—your predecessors on these benches. I trust that this testimony of your partial regard will, along with it, descend to a successor who will esteem it as I do. Grateful for the gift, I am, if possible, more so for the manner in which you have expressed yourselves by your companion, my esteemed pupil, Master M. Proctor. Following in the footsteps of my father, I hope I have done something to advance the cause of education. All the energies I possess have been continually exercised; all the resources at my command have been freely used in my endeavour to promote your progress in sound learning, as well as to increase your happiness and to add to the enjoyment of your schoolboy days. I shall not dwell upon the past. The gift which you have presented will have been bestowed in vain upon me unless you and I are stimulated to fresh exertions. 'Onward' has in past times been our motto; let it be so still. Let us regard the little we have done as a stimulus to the performance of what remains to be accomplished. All of you will, I hope, both in your present sphere and when engaged in the business of life, labour diligently to improve, for the glory of the

Great Giver, those talents with which you are intrusted; and when life shall have come to a close, may you and may I be enabled, in humble dependence upon the Blood of the Lamb, to look forward with hope and confidence to the commencement of the illimitable eternity, for which life is but a preparation."

Mr Bruce, at the conclusion of his address, invited his pupils to dine with him in the afternoon, and upwards of 120 accepted the invitation.

The large schoolroom proved too weak to bear the weight imposed upon it by the numerous visitors who attended the public examination, and it became necessary to have the schoolroom rebuilt. This was done in the midsummer holidays, 1843.

In June 1858 Dr Bruce took five of his boys to Oxford, to be examined there under the University Extension Scheme, then lately established. He hailed the scheme as one of great importance, likely to promote the efficiency and test the merits of the private schools throughout England. He preferred that the examination should take place at Oxford rather than at a local centre. He took personal interest in the training of his boys for this examination, and remained with them at Oxford until it was over.

Writing to Mr Way, who was abroad, in March 1858, he says:—

"As matters now are, I must give up my spring trip. You will have seen notices in the newspapers about the Oxford Middle Class Examination. I think this is a most important step towards the advancement of education in England, and as soon as I heard of it I advised some



of my boys to put in their claims. Several want to go up for examination. I cannot desert them, and am spending two hours a-day with them to help them in their preparations. I am thus a fixture in England until the end of June.”<sup>1</sup>

In the year 1855 some of the old pupils of Percy Street Academy resolved to hold a dinner to celebrate the jubilee of the school. The dinner was held on the 6th of November and passed off with great *éclat*. Among the old pupils present were a large number of distinguished men of Newcastle and the neighbourhood. Mr Lothian Bell, afterwards Sir Lothian Bell, Bart., an old pupil who was Mayor of Newcastle at the time, was in the chair, and in proposing the toast of “Prosperity to the Percy Street Academy,” said:—

“In Percy Street Academy Mr Bruce laid the foundation of a very excellent and prosperous concern, but a school could not live long on the value of a good name. Constant and close attention was required of any one called to undertake its superintendence. He believed, however, that it was impossible to imagine how any one could have succeeded more worthily to the position of the late Mr Bruce than his son, Dr Bruce. At the time when Dr Bruce appeared likely to assume the reins of government in Percy Street Academy, considerable progress had been made in the cause of education. His late father had taken the first step in combining classical

<sup>1</sup> There is no record of the result among Dr Bruce's papers, but Sir Wemyss Reid, in his speech at the “Old Boys' Dinner” on the 9th January 1903, said that all the boys passed the examination.

education with training in more useful and practical pursuits, and Dr Bruce saw that the time was rapidly approaching when it would be necessary for boys destined to a commercial career to have an even more extended curriculum of study than that laid down by his late father. It was to Dr Bruce that they owed the introduction of a well-directed system of scientific education."

Dr Bruce, in replying, said :—

"Mr Mayor, Schoolmates, and Gentlemen, this is an occasion of peculiar interest. The present gathering enables us to ascend the stream of time, to realise the joys of boyhood, and to renew its warm-hearted friendships. We have long since forgotten the little troubles of our school-boy life, or remember them only to wonder that they ever brought a cloud to the brow. Once more surrounded by our former companions we seem to be schoolboys again, and to drink in afresh the joys of that sunny period all the more eagerly from our having become acquainted with the stern realities of life. Cheered by this momentary release from our ordinary anxieties, we will return, I hope, to the discharge of our usual avocations encouraged and strengthened. This is an occasion which must have an important reciprocal influence upon us all. We seldom drop a word which has not some effect in moulding the character of the man to whom it is addressed. How vast must, therefore, be the influence which the teacher has upon his pupils. He has the advantage of age and authority, they are of an

age to look for guidance, and their minds are in a state peculiarly susceptible of impressions. The teacher and the pupil are brought into close intercourse with each other for years. It is impossible to over-estimate the influence a teacher may have in forming the habits and moulding the thoughts and feelings of his pupil, and this is education, rather than the cramming of the memory with a few facts. This occasion will, I am sure, help forward the great cause of education. It will sustain the labourer in his wearisome, long-continued, and often thankless toils. Who can look upon this assembly, the fruits of but one school, and not be cheered? And yet, the gentlemen here gathered are merely representatives of a host of others as high principled, as intelligent, as influential, as useful. The husbandman is in spring cheered by the hopes of harvest. I am cheered by the sight of as goodly and golden a crop as ever waved in the autumnal breeze, and many a brother schoolmaster who hears of our proceedings to-day will share my joy and take courage. I am sure that if fifty years ago my father could have anticipated such an assemblage, the labours and anxieties under which he was often almost sinking would to him have seemed comparatively light. But more than all this, gatherings such as the present have a tendency to elevate the schoolmaster in the social scale. My father had no cause to complain that an adequate meed of honour was not awarded him; still less have I. But it must be confessed that in general the schoolmaster holds a lower position in society than

is right. It is for the good of mankind that the instructor of youth should both respect himself and be respected by others, that an office so useful should be accounted honourable. Your presence here to-day, gentlemen, and the kind expressions made use of by our excellent president, and responded to by you, proclaim to all the world that in this northern metropolis it is so regarded."

In 1856 Dr Bruce took the Rev. Gilbert Robertson, M.A., into partnership with him in the management of the school, and in June 1859 Dr Bruce retired from the active management, but he continued frequently to visit it, and he took the Friday Bible-class until June 1864. Dr and Mrs Bruce in June 1859 moved from the old house in Percy Street and went to live in the house No. 3 Framlington Place. They moved from No. 3 to No. 2 on the 2nd May 1863, where Dr Bruce spent the remainder of his life.

On the occasion of his setting up house in Framlington Place, his mother presented him with a handsome silver salver bearing the following inscription:—

Presented to the  
REV. JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, LL.D.,  
BY HIS MOTHER,  
AS AN  
AFFECTIONATE MEMORIAL  
OF HIS DUTIFUL KINDNESS TO  
HERSELF AND FAMILY  
DURING THE LONG PERIOD OF  
HER WIDOWHOOD.  
1859.

He wrote to his mother in acknowledgment of her present :—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 30th *June* 1859.

“I was quite concerned to see the salver this morning, which you have been kind enough to give me. On looking on its massiveness and beauty and purity, I thought chiefly of the privation which it had cost you. Though not fond of plated things generally, I wish this had been plated rather than real. However, as you have given me so royal a present, I wish I could adequately thank you for it. It will render our new sideboard quite superb. Charlotte and I thank you very much for it. On looking on it we shall ever think of your largeness of heart, and will be stimulated to follow you in the narrow road which leads to the house of many mansions.”

## CHAPTER V.

1833, MARRIAGE OF J. C. BRUCE—1834, BIRTH OF SON—1838, BIRTH OF DAUGHTER, FRANCES; 1839, DIED—1840, BIRTH OF DAUGHTER NAMED WILLIAMINA BENNETT—1841, J. C. B. VISITS ENGLISH CATHEDRALS—1843, VISIT TO OXFORD—VISIT TO ALLANS GREEN—1844, LETTERS FROM ST ANDREWS—1845, DEATH OF MR GAINSFORD.

ON the 20th of June 1833 John Collingwood Bruce was married at Chalfont St Peters, Buckinghamshire, to Charlotte, the youngest daughter of Mr Tobias Gainsford, a retired London merchant then resident at Gerrards Cross, a lineal descendant of the ancient family of Gainsford of Crowhurst.

The following letter from John Bruce to his wife at Newcastle gives some account of this event:—

“GERRARDS CROSS, *June 19, 1833.*

“We arrived here on Monday evening, and found all the family busily employed making preparations for Thursday. Mr and Mrs Gainsford had met us in town, and Mr Gainsford went along with us to Doctors Commons to procure the licence, which John has now in his pocket, and the parson is duly summoned to be at Church to-morrow at half-past ten. Charlotte is looking very well, and is at present in very good spirits, which I hope will



1944 ELECTRA ENGRAVING 'S

FINISH HARDEN'S BOND

FRUGES ACADEMY







BRUCE ACADEMY

FROM EAST SIDE STREET

THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



not fail her at the last. Mr and Mrs Gainsford are exceedingly kind, and appear well satisfied with the choice their daughter has made; and I think John has every reason to be thankful at the prospect which awaits him. Charlotte and he seem well adapted to promote each other's happiness. I shall leave the rest of this sheet to be filled up with the important news of to-morrow.

*"June 20th, 1833.*

"All is over. Your son John has just driven from the door, and his wife with him. I cannot tell you all the events of the day: they have almost overcome my feelings. Charlotte has conducted herself throughout just as you would have wished the wife of your son to do.

"With the strongest affection towards her own parents, she has resigned them, all but without a tear, to accompany her husband to a distant land. I have told her, if she is leaving one mother in the south, she will meet with another in the north.

"Give my kind love to all at home. I have seen very little in London yet, but I intend next week doing all I have to do there, and then making my way homewards. Tell Anne I like the wedding dresses. They are handsome but neat."

The young couple, after their marriage, drove to St Albans, and on their wedding tour they visited Northampton, Derby, Matlock, Castleton, and the Peak Cavern, Manchester, and Liverpool. There is a note in the bride's diary that the journey from

Manchester to Liverpool was accomplished by rail. From Liverpool they went to Lancaster, thence to Kendal, Keswick, and Carlisle, and arrived at Newcastle on the 4th of July.

This marriage was the beginning of a particularly happy union, which continued unbroken for nearly sixty years. Charlotte was of a singularly bright and active temperament, a delightful companion, an excellent housekeeper, exceptionally endowed with the capacity for directing competently and tactfully the domestic concerns of the school. They began their housekeeping in 15 Albion Place, adjoining the house where John and Mary Bruce had resided prior to the opening of Percy Street Academy, and where John Collingwood Bruce had been born. Here on the 24th May 1834 was born their eldest child, a son, named Gainsford after his maternal grandfather. Shortly after the death of John Bruce, which occurred, as we have seen, on the 31st October 1834, Mrs Bruce, his widow, went to live in the house in Albion Place, and John Collingwood Bruce and his wife took up their residence at the schoolhouse in Percy Street, where they continued to reside for twenty-five years. On the 29th of May 1838 a daughter was born. She was named Frances. Her death in the following year was a great grief to her parents.

On the 9th of May 1840 another daughter was born, and was named Williamina Bennett, after Mr William Bennett, an old friend of the Gainsford family.

During the school vacations John Collingwood Bruce sought relaxation in visiting places in England of historical interest, but he often spent a part of his

vacation under the hospitable roof of his father-in-law, Mr Tobias Gainsford, at Gerrards Cross. Indeed, during Mr Gainsford's life the greater part of the summer holidays were spent by Mr and Mrs Bruce at that delightful retreat.

The following letter to his wife gives an account of a walk to Windsor:—

“GERRARDS CROSS, *Jan. 2nd*, 1841.

“I walked to Windsor this morning. I diverged by the way to look at Stoke Church and Gray's Monument. You know that I have a particular liking for this spot. I thought it, if possible, more interesting than ever. The church has recently been repaired, the steeple, etc., painted; and as most of the trees of the churchyard are evergreens, and the day was particularly bright, I enjoyed the scene much. The church was open, and I went into it. I had not been in it before. The arch separating the nave from the chancel appeared to me to be Norman, and there were one or two interesting early English arches.

“I then made the best of my way to the Castle, as I had been told that the Queen went out about half-past twelve. I arrived at the gateway opposite the long walk shortly after that hour. I walked about there till two o'clock, when the new terrace was opened. Here I paraded till three, when the Little Lady made her appearance in a little low pony phaeton drawn by two white ponies. Prince Albert drove. Not being satisfied with one glimpse of royalty, I awaited the return of the party,

which took place in about half an hour. The Queen was looking remarkably well: she had abundance of colour. Immediately after the return of the Queen I set off on my road hither, where I arrived about six, not having ceased walking since half-past ten in the morning."

In the summer holidays of 1841 he devoted some time to the study of Gothic architecture, and he visited many of the cathedrals of England with a view to obtain a complete knowledge of their various styles. He took with him a favourite pupil, Mr Daggett Ingledew. The letters which follow show his interest in the places he visited, and how carefully he cherished the historical associations connected with them:—

(To his Wife.)

"CANTERBURY, *June 30th*, 1841.

"I have had a very hard day's work, and it now only wants a quarter to twelve. I breakfasted at seven this morning, and spent an hour and a half in Rochester Cathedral: the verger was in a hurry, and Daggett about tired, so I was obliged to be satisfied. The cathedral greatly exceeded my expectations. The north transept is a most beautiful specimen of very Early English; the dog-tooth ornament is very lavishly used. The doorway into the chapter-room is an exquisite work of art; an emblematical figure representing the downfall of the Jewish Church equals, if not exceeds, any piece of sculpture I ever saw. I long to have another gaze at it. The tomb of John de Sheppey, Lord

High Treasurer to Edward III., in the choir, is most beautiful; and as it is coloured, I had an opportunity of making out the robes worn by the ecclesiastics, such as the stole, maniple, tunic, etc. The crypt is more extensive than any other, and part of it is more rude and simple than the rest, and is considered to be genuine Saxon (prior to the Conquest). On leaving the cathedral we packed up and set off for Chatham. We went over the dockyard. I was pleased with what we saw. We awaited the arrival of the mail at half-past 12 o'clock. It drove up full. Afterwards another coach came full. A third time we were more fortunate, there being room, but barely so, for us. We arrived here at half-past 5, and found the town in all the bustle of an election just concluded. We dined at six, having had almost no food for nearly twelve hours: we had to send for a second supply of chops. Immediately after dinner we went upon a voyage of discovery. We had a peep at the cathedral, a mere sip of its glories, our guide having got tired of us before we had had two hours of it. Whatever may be said of the details, the general effect, both of the exterior and interior, is, as far as I can judge, superior even to York. I could hardly conceive that the genius of man was capable of producing such a glorious structure. The whole city is very rich in historical recollections. I fancy myself at this moment in the midst of the great ones who have flourished upon the scene here since the days of Ethelbert and his pious Queen Bertha."

(To his Wife.)

“OXFORD, *July 8th*, 1841.

“I was excessively tired last night, and was obliged to go to bed at 11 o'clock.

“I am too tired to enter into particulars; my eyes are sore with seeing. I will just name what I have visited. The cathedral, which is chiefly Norman, we passed a very pleasant hour in. It contains, amongst some other beautiful shrines, one to a Saxon princess named St Frideswide, whose history I will tell you afterwards.

“I next visited St Mary Magdalene Church, which is in a great measure being rebuilt; there is some beautiful work in it. Close to this the memorial to Latimer, Ridley, and Cranmer is being erected. I examined the tower of the church with great care and reverence. I climbed up the tower as high as the bells, but did not go upon the summit outside; I am sorry now I did not, for I have since learnt that Cranmer stood upon the top of it to see his fellow-prisoners burnt. After that I went in search of the site of the prison in which these good men were confined, and examined some parts of the city wall and ditch. I returned to my inn. After dinner I went to the museum; it is by no means so extensive or showy as the Newcastle Museum, but it contains one or two invaluable articles; first and foremost is an ornament worn by the greatest of earthly monarchs, Alfred the Great. The museum-keeper, seeing I was viewing the interesting relic with attention, very kindly took it out of the case and allowed me to examine it minutely in my own hands.



"I next went to Magdalene College. The tower of it is a very admirable work. The chapel is magnificent; it has been fresh done up lately at an expense of £16,000.

"After minor peeps at other things, we next came to New College, founded by William of Wykeham. The grounds are beautifully laid out; the chapel is enough to immortalise William though he had done nothing else. His crozier is preserved in the chapel; it is a very interesting relic of fine taste and of princely pomp. It was now seven o'clock, and we bethought ourselves of tea. Since tea I have been attempting to get into the remains of the old castle, but I was too late. I have walked round it and had a peep of its good old walls. It was in this castle Matilda was besieged by Stephen, and Gainsford will tell you the story of the mode of her escape."

(To his Wife.)

"WINCHESTER, *July 10th*, 1841.

"Yesterday morning I took a walk in Oxford before breakfast to have another peep at the old walls of the castle. Before nine I was on the coach for this place; we had a beautiful ride. Amongst other things, we passed through Newbury, close to which town Charles I. was on two different occasions defeated by Cromwell. We arrived here shortly after three and dined, and issued forth on our voyage of discovery shortly after four, and kept at it without interruption till it was quite dark; it was within a few minutes of ten when we got to our inn. The principal objects that attracted our attention

were the cathedral, the old castle, the college, and the college chapel, and we ascended St Catherine's Hill to have a view of the city therefrom, and to view the remains of an old Roman camp which are upon it. This morning I am going to see St Cross, the palace of Charles II., and the Bridewell, occupying the spot where stood the Abbey in which Alfred was buried. Then we set off for Southampton. I want a quiet day on Sunday, and so shall either go to Cowes or to Hythe for it, according as I get boats at Southampton to-night."

(To his Wife.)

"SALISBURY, *July 10th*, 1841.

"I write to-night merely to say where I am. Finding that we are likely to be hard pressed for time, I thought it best to come here, so as to be ready for Stonehenge early on Monday morning. It is a desperately wet night. I have been very much pleased with what I saw of Winchester this morning, particularly with the hospital and Church of St Cross.

"*Sunday.*

"P.S.—I have been twice to the cathedral to-day, and purpose going to the independent chapel to-night. This is a very quiet comfortable inn. I intend having a fly to Stonehenge to-morrow morning at five o'clock, to be back at ten, spend an hour amongst the monuments in the cathedral, and catch a coach at 11 to Southampton, so as to get to the New Forest by the evening."

In 1842 his youngest brother, George Barclay Bruce, now Sir George Barclay Bruce, who had then just

finished his apprenticeship to Mr Robert Stephenson, wrote the following letter in acknowledgment of the assistance he had received from his elder brother :—

“ST MARY’S PLACE, *Dec. 21st*, 1842.

“One of the most pleasant parts of my duty, now that I have arrived at the conclusion of my apprenticeship, is to thank you and Charlotte for all the kindness you have shown me during boyhood and youth, and as a proof that these have not been unnoticed or unfelt, I beg your acceptance of the accompanying token of my love and gratitude, happy in the conviction that the smallness of its value bears no proportion to the feelings with which I regard the amount of my debt due to you for all the advantages I have derived from your instruction, since wherever I may be placed I can only hope for advancement by carrying into practice, under the blessing of God, what I have received from you.”

Early in the year 1843 he again visited Oxford, and wrote the following account to his wife :—

“GERRARDS CROSS, *Jan. 3rd*, 1843.

“I arrived here last night at a quarter to six, and had just time to add a line or two to Mr Gainsford’s letter to say that I had arrived safely. I got into Oxford at 10, and having secured my place by the 1 o’clock coach, set out on my peregrinations. Somehow I was not in particularly good spirits, and did not feel so much elated as usual at the fine specimens of architectural genius that I saw. The martyrs’ memorial quite equalled

fast at Allans Green. The hot crisp toast, the poached eggs, the cold game, and the hot coffee and cream were delicacies which a schoolboy fully appreciated. He remembers going out with the young Lowes, as was their custom, just before bed-time, to go through the stables to see that the horses were comfortable for the night. Nor has he forgotten the board arranged to slide down-hill so as to form a moveable target for practising shooting.

The next letter gives a description of a journey Dr Bruce took from Gerrards Cross to Newcastle to vote for his friend Mr Annandale, a candidate for the office of Hon. Surgeon to the Newcastle Infirmary.

(To his Wife.)

“NEWCASTLE, *July 16th*, 1844.

“I wrote a few lines in pencil last night which I hope you will receive to-morrow, telling you of my welfare up to Darlington. I arrived at Gateshead at a quarter past nine. What a wonderful journey! I breakfasted at Gerrards Cross, dined at York, and drank tea in Newcastle. I never enjoyed a railway journey so much before. We lost no time in stoppages. We did the distance between Rugby and Leicester, 20 miles, in half-an-hour. I was struck with the splendour of the terminus at this end, which I had not seen before. I was not expected home till 11 o'clock, but they soon had the kettle boiling and a fire lighted for me.

“Well, as to the great object of my journey, you will be sorry to learn that it has been in vain. The poll is as follows: Potter 202, Annandale 151, Talmadge 73.”

The next letters, dated December 31, 1844, are written from St Andrews.

(To his Wife.)

“Mr Taylor, the Secession minister, is a very interesting and kind and well-informed man. We supped with him last night, and he walked about the place with us all this afternoon.

“We got here about two o'clock, and immediately proceeded to survey the city; this we did in about two hours, when darkness and hunger induced us to retire to our inn. We had haddocks and beef-steak for dinner, the former the finest I ever tasted, the latter remarkable for being cut out of a bull that was calved before the Conquest: being in search of the antique, I could not grumble.

“I cannot tell you all the objects of interest in this place; it is replete with historical associations. We have visited a cave cut out of the rock on the coast, which is said to have been formed by St Regulus, a Greek monk, A.D. 370.

“The greatest curiosity here is a tower belonging to what they call St Regulus' Chapel, and which they say was built by the saint. It is 108 feet high; its masonry appears to me to be far too good for so early a date. From the top we had a delightful view of the sea and surrounding country. We examined the ruins of the cathedral, which are very interesting, though they are not to be compared in point of elegance with many in England, that of St Mary's at York for example. We are going to-night (the last of the year) to hear sermon

at the Free Church, where there is an excellent minister, Mr Hetherington, the historian of the Scottish Church.

"We are both quite well. This will not reach you till next year. God grant you a happy year, and may His richest blessings descend upon you, my dear wife. Give my warmest congratulations and best wishes to all your party.

"I was proceeding with a description of this place when the post hour obliged me to stop. This city for about a thousand years was the ecclesiastical capital of Scotland.

"Its greatness has departed; ruin and desolation are spread around. This is a fitting place in which to spend the ebbing tide of the year. We, too, must crumble into dust; God grant that through faith in Christ we may be raised up in glory.

"The colleges here are of much less importance than I had supposed. The students are not so numerous as in our school. The professor of chemistry has only twenty students; the professor of natural philosophy twenty-four.

"The principal church of the city is the one in which John Knox preached before the Lords of the Convention, as represented in Wilkie's celebrated picture; of course we visited it. The pulpit in which he preached is now in one of the deserted halls of one of the colleges; we examined it and got into it. The painter has closely copied it. I was speaking to Mr Taylor about the vehemence of the reformer's manner. He showed me a passage in the diary of a contemporary which represents him as being in the

decline of his life so feeble as to require the support of two attendants while walking to church; but when he grew warm with his discourse in the pulpit he was fit 'to` ding it in blads'—that is, to smash the pulpit to splinters. I shall feel a greater interest in the picture than ever.

"We visited the grave of the great and good Samuel Rutherford."

On the 27th of July 1845 Mr Tobias Gainsford died, after a short illness, at Gerrards Cross, to the great grief of his family and friends, and was buried at Kensal Green Cemetery on the 31st July. His widow went to live at Cheltenham with Mrs Beman, one of her married daughters.

Dr Bruce's long and pleasant associations with Gerrards Cross endeared the place to him, and it was to him a matter of deep regret that the connection of the family with the house ceased at the death of Mr Gainsford.

We conclude this chapter with a letter written to him by his mother on the occasion of his birthday, the 15th Sept. 1845.

"ST MARY'S PLACE.

"As I have nothing at present to offer you on this interesting occasion but my good wishes, allow me to assure you that they are more and larger than I can express. I thank God for your birth, and for all the way by which he has hitherto so graciously led you, and that he is now permitting me to see you enter this day on your fortieth year in circumstances of so much comfort and usefulness. As your years

and responsibilities increase, my beloved son, may the work of the Holy Spirit be advancing in your soul to strengthen and animate you in the performance of every duty, and to comfort and support you under every trial, causing the remainder of your path thro' this earthly pilgrimage to be that of the just, which 'shineth more and more unto the perfect day.'

"That your life and health may long be spared as a blessing to your family, and to all under your influence, in the spiritual enjoyment of that peace which Jesus bequeathed to his disciples, is, my dear John, the earnest prayer of your truly                   AFFECTIONATE MOTHER."



## CHAPTER VI.

1845, LECTURE ON THE DIFFERENT STYLES OF GOTHIC ARCHITECTURE—  
VISIT TO CARNARVON AND CONWAY—1847, LECTURES ON CASTEL-  
LATED ARCHITECTURE—HANDBOOK TO THE CASTLE OF NEWCASTLE—  
THE RESTORATION OF THE CASTLE—BANQUET IN THE GREAT HALL  
OF THE CASTLE—RESTORATION OF THE BLACK GATE.

DR BRUCE, during the early years of his manage-  
ment of the school, was mainly occupied with his  
profession, which led him to the study of history.  
A letter, written in April 1884 to the editor of the  
'Consett Guardian,'<sup>1</sup> explains how he was led to  
study the various styles of Gothic architecture.

"I had a class of fine intelligent boys whom  
I was wishful to instruct in English History.  
I felt that it was of little use to cram their  
memories with facts; my business, I thought,  
was to interest them in the study, and show  
them how to pursue it. Under these circum-  
stances it was necessary to confine ourselves to  
a limited period, and to enter into it minutely,  
and to do it thoroughly. I chose the Saxon  
period. We tried to make ourselves acquainted  
with the Saxon tongue. We had been much  
occupied with the Saxon wars; but it occurred  
to me that the Saxons were not altogether in-

<sup>1</sup> See also 'Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries, Newcastle,' vol.  
iii. p. 265.

attentive to the cultivation of the fine arts. I had heard, at all events, of Saxon architecture, and I resolved to study it, and introduce my boys to a knowledge of it. I could not well have entered upon a more puzzling inquiry. There is very little Saxon architecture in England. In order to understand what it was, I had to master the details of Gothic architecture in general. I took my boys along with me in my inquiries. We visited together the principal architectural structures in the north of England, Jarrow, Tynemouth, Durham, Hexham, &c., and learnt to distinguish the Norman from the early English, the decorated, and the perpendicular. Some of the lads were good draughtsmen, and they prepared diagrams by means of which I could the better instruct my class. I took another step at this period without knowing to what it would lead. Lectures were wanted at this time for the winter's course of the Literary and Philosophical Society. Having acquired a certain acquaintance with Gothic architecture, and having by me a series of large diagrams illustrative of its chief features, I ventured to give a lecture upon this subject before the Society in 1845."

The lecture was entitled "The Characteristics of the different styles of Gothic Architecture," and was so much appreciated by his audience that Dr Bruce was encouraged to deliver in March 1847, before the same Society, a course of five lectures on castellated architecture.

He expended much time and labour in preparing

this course of lectures. During school holidays he visited most of the castles in England, and some in Normandy, and had elaborate drawings and plans prepared as illustrations.

The following letter shows the enthusiastic interest with which he examined Carnarvon Castle when preparing these lectures.

(To his Wife.)

"CARNARVON, *Jan. 8th*, 1847.

"I got to Bangor very comfortably by a quarter before 6. The night was not wet, though rather cold. Conway looked beautiful as we passed through it in the misty moonlight of 4 o'clock A.M. After a hasty breakfast I started for this place at 7, where I arrived at 8½. I immediately set to work, and studied with amazing relish the stone walls of this perfect specimen of the architecture of Edward I. till 3 o'clock, when I dined. I have since been copying sections and plans, and now (6 o'clock) it is time I was off again on my return to Conway, which I purpose examining to-morrow, and if it only gives me half the satisfaction I have had here, it will amply repay me. I never saw so complete a specimen of a castellated town, and never had such a thorough rummage over a building of such extent. There was no housekeeper to bother me. I got some good hints from a builder, who is repairing it by directions of Government.

"The day has been beautiful; I expect to get to Chester to-morrow night, when I hope to enjoy the day of rest. I long to know how you get on. I am exceedingly glad I have come

here; I was sadly at a loss for a good castle of the date between the Norman and such splendid structures as Warwick. Carnarvon is a host in itself, and Conway will give me further assistance."

The lectures commenced with an account of ancient British fortifications, giving a description of the Herefordshire Beacon, Old Sarum, the vitrified forts in the Highlands of Scotland, and the general character of Roman fortifications. The second and third lectures were devoted to a description of the Norman castle, with special reference to the Tower of London and the Castles of Rochester and Newcastle. The fourth lecture dealt with castles of the Plantagenet and Tudor period, with special reference to Chateau Gaillard, Carnarvon, Conway, and Alnwick Castles. In the fifth lecture, the mode of attacking and defending a castle was described and illustrated by an account of the sieges of, and assaults upon, castles.

The lectures were well attended, and excited great interest. At the end of the last lecture of the course, Dr Bruce mentioned that he would be glad to meet any of his hearers at the Castle of Newcastle on the following Saturday, in order to explain the arrangement of the building. Dr Charlton, in moving a vote of thanks to the lecturer, observed that no time could be more propitiously chosen for the admirable lectures than the present, when the buildings surrounding and encumbering the castle of the town, a noble remnant of a bygone age, were about to be cleared away. He called upon all present to aid in the good work of forwarding the repairs of the ancient keep, and congratulated the members on the deep interest that had

been excited by the lecturer's eloquent addresses in favour of the restoration and preservation of the castle.

At this time the Castle of Newcastle was in a very unsatisfactory state. Many of the passages and doorways had been closed to fit it for the purposes of a prison. The great hall was used as a sleeping-room by the custodian; the room on the first floor was occupied as a schoolroom, and the beautiful chapel had become a receptacle for rubbish, and had fallen into decay.

On Saturday, March 27, 1847, a number of ladies and gentlemen assembled at the castle, and were accompanied by Dr Bruce, who explained to them the arrangements of the fortress. The result was that public interest was aroused, and proceedings were taken at the instance of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle to have the castle put into a proper state of repair, and to have arrangements made for the admission of the public to view the features of the building.

In the month of April a sub-committee, consisting of Dr Charlton and Dr Bruce, was appointed by the Society of Antiquaries to consider the best means of carrying out the restoration of the old keep. The members of the sub-committee had several interviews with the Mayor and other members of the Corporation on the subject, and communicated with Mr Dobson, the eminent architect, relative to the cost and extent of the necessary repairs, and a report entering into detail was presented by the sub-committee to the Society. There followed upon this report a memorial from the Society of Antiquaries to the Corporation, soliciting the Corporation to grant to the Society a

lease of the keep, in order to place therein their collection of Roman and mediæval antiquities. It was further suggested that the Corporation would be pleased not only to sanction the endeavours on the part of the Society to carry out the restoration of the keep, but would also assist them with some pecuniary aid.

In August 1847 Dr Bruce published a guide to the Castle of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. It contained an elaborate and interesting historical account of the castle, illustrated with plans and sections and numerous woodcuts of the rooms and passages. The book was very favourably reviewed, it had a considerable circulation, and its publication contributed to increase the interest of the public in the ancient fortress. The author was much gratified by receiving a letter shortly after the publication of the book from Professor Donaldson, the Professor of Architecture at University College, London, stating that the Guide to Newcastle Castle so fully illustrated the general features of the architecture of the Norman castle that he intended to make it a text-book for his pupils.

At the anniversary meeting of the Society, held on the 7th February 1848, John Hodgson Hinde, Esq., in the chair, Mr John Adamson, senior Secretary, stated that the Finance Committee of the Corporation, to whom the matter had been referred, had reported favourably, and a lease had been directed to be granted to the Society at a nominal annual rent of 2s. 6d., and it was further ordered that £250 should be subscribed by the Corporation towards the repairs. It was estimated that the sum of £250 would be sufficient to carry out the necessary repairs in the chapel and in the apartment at the head of the main

staircase, and to restore the entrance door to the great hall. Mr Dobson, however, informed the Committee that it would cost an additional sum of about £600 or £700 to put the whole keep into perfect repair.

Dr Bruce at this meeting declared that they ought not to rest satisfied until they had the whole building completely restored. The money they had would not suffice, and as there was at present a strong sympathetic feeling abroad with respect to the castle, the question was whether they should not endeavour to have the restoration done now, and strike while the iron was hot. He suggested that, if the Society were to commence a subscription by having a banquet in the great hall of the castle, it would materially aid them to achieve their purpose; and, after some discussion, the following resolution proposed by him was adopted:—

(1) That Mr Dobson be requested to prepare a detailed estimate of the whole expense.

(2) That a subscription be commenced at the earliest opportunity for the purpose of enabling the Society to restore the whole building.

(3) That a banquet be held in the great hall during the Summer Assizes, and that the nobility and gentry of the neighbourhood be invited to attend.

(4) That Mr Dobson be ordered to commence immediately with the restoration of the chapel.

By the month of July 1848 the chapel had been restored, and the restoration of the great doorway was nearly finished. On 3rd August 1848 a grand banquet was held in the great hall of the old castle to celebrate the restoration of the building. Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland, who had lately suc-

ceeded to the title, and who held the office of patron of the Society, was in the chair, and was supported by Sir Charles Monck, Bart., John Hodgson Hinde, Esq., the High Sheriff of Northumberland, the Mayor of Newcastle, and many of the leading gentlemen of the town and district. The great hall was ornamented with banners bearing the arms of the noble families connected with the North of England. The Duke's piper played on the Northumberland pipes "Chevy Chase" and other north country airs. Numerous toasts were proposed. The Duke in proposing the toast of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, coupled with the health of the President, Sir John Swinburne, Bart., said—

"We are indebted to the Corporation of this town for the liberality with which they have given this noble structure to the Antiquarian Society. It must be the anxious wish of that Society to make this building worthy of the object for which it was given them, to make it not only an attraction to the town of Newcastle, but also a place of improvement for those who would study the history, the social condition, and the habits of our ancestors. In proposing prosperity to your Society, I entreat you to ensure that prosperity by securing to your museum all objects of antiquity which are found in this county, so that you will make your museum worthy of the town of Newcastle, and of the adjoining district; at the same time you will confer a benefit upon England itself."

The Duke of Northumberland proposed the health of Dr Bruce, who had, by his lectures on castellated



architecture, directed public attention to the restoration of the castle, and who was the originator of the banquet.

This was Dr Bruce's first introduction to the Duke, from whom in after years he received most important help and encouragement in his literary work, and for whose generous character and great ability he entertained the highest regard.

The banquet was most successful, and gave an impetus to the subscription which was raised for completing the repairs to the castle. On Friday, 4th August, the day following the banquet, in order to afford the public an opportunity of viewing the repairs and decorations, the castle was thrown open, and a promenade was held through the various chambers, which were lighted with gas. A lecture was delivered by Dr Bruce in the great hall illustrative of the history of the castle. A small charge was made, and the proceeds went to the restoration fund.

The following account of the proceedings is taken from the 'Newcastle Journal' of 5th August 1848 :—

“The doors were opened at 5.30, from which period there was a rapidly increasing arrival of company, to about 8.30, when more than 500 persons had gained admission. The visitors had the whole range of the castle, and, gratified with the privilege which had been afforded them, peered into every hole and corner of the building, threading the secret ways, chambers, and staircases with an alacrity which exhibited how highly they appreciated the treat which had been prepared for them. But when Dr Bruce commenced his deeply interesting lecture on the ancient

structure, its history and associations, and the memorabilia of the personages whose banners decorated the hall, the audience rapidly centred themselves in the great hall and its surrounding galleries. Never, perhaps, has the castle witnessed such a sight, the hall filled with a gaily dressed throng, in which the fair sex largely preponderated, the torches flaming upward and causing the banners to float in every direction, and the whole surface of the lofty walls glistening with arms and armour. The assembled throng, in expressing their gratification, requested Dr Bruce to repeat the lecture on the following Friday, as hundreds had been unable to obtain admission, and to this he assented."

Accordingly, on the following Friday another promenade took place and another lecture was given by Dr Bruce, and so much interest was created by entertainments of this kind that they had to be frequently repeated, and the old castle became a popular attraction.

In the report of the Council presented to the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle for the year 1848, it was stated as follows :—

"The grand features in the transactions of the year have been the occupation of the castle, the removal of the collections, and the splendid banquet given on the 3rd August last to commemorate the taking possession of the ancient keep."

The report referred to the soirees, and stated that the public who were admitted

"were delighted with Dr Bruce's instructive and

excellent lectures, embracing accounts of the structure and purposes of the various apartments in the building, the names of the kings and heroes who had been the inhabitants, visitors, or defenders in times gone by."

The collection of antiquities belonging to the Society, which had theretofore been kept on the premises belonging to the Literary and Philosophical Society, was removed to the castle, and proper fittings were made for its reception of the collection. Thus the castle became the depository of the finest collection of antiquities in the north of England. So much interest was excited by these proceedings that little difficulty was experienced in raising by subscription a sum of money sufficient to enable the Society to restore the entire keep as far as possible to its original condition, and to provide for the expenses of the removal of the museum.

Until the present time the Norman keep has continued to be occupied by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. The monthly meetings of the Society are regularly held there, and there the valuable collection of books forming the library of the Society is kept. The public are admitted at all times during the day to visit the castle and inspect the museum on payment of a small entrance fee.

In the year 1855 alterations were in progress to open out the approach to the High Level Bridge, and there was some danger that a new street proposed by the Corporation would obscure that venerable relic of antiquity, the Black Gate.

At the August meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle Mr John Fenwick, Dr Bruce, and Dr

Charlton were appointed a committee to endeavour to procure such a modification of the plan as would place the Black Gate in a prominent situation, and at the meeting in October there was a further conversation respecting the Black Gate. Dr Charlton reported that the Duke of Northumberland was most anxious that so ancient and interesting a structure should be restored and preserved with becoming reverence, and not be exposed to any modern vandalism. The chairman, Mr John Clayton, said the town, he was sure, would view the question with no sordid feelings.

Dr Bruce said the Black Gate was a peculiarly interesting structure, and it was remarkable that they knew the exact date and cost of its erection. The governing body of Newcastle could make a boast peculiar to themselves, that they had made a school of instruction out of an old castle open to visitors from all parts, where the genius of Norman architecture might be much better studied than in books. It now only remained for the Corporation to crown their reputation by making the old Black Gate one of the brightest evidences of their liberality and public spirit.

At the annual meeting of the Society, held on the 31st of January 1883, Mr Hodgkin said the Society had undertaken to become tenants of the Black Gate on the understanding that £1000 more or less should be expended in restoring the building. It is not necessary to follow in detail the negotiations between the Society and the Corporation respecting the Black Gate; it is enough to say that at the monthly meeting of the Society held on the 29th of August 1883, Dr Hodgkin reported that the lease of the Black Gate by the Corporation to the Society had been completed,

and that workmen had already begun the necessary repairs. By the liberality of the members of the Society and the general public a sum of money was raised by subscription sufficient to provide for all the work necessary for cleaning the Black Gate and removing the modern additions which concealed parts of the groined roof, finials, and other parts of the ancient structure. This interesting specimen of early English architecture now contains a most valuable collection of objects of antiquity which could not be so well displayed in the old keep.

Indeed, the collection of antiquities belonging to the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle has of late years so greatly increased that the accommodation in the old keep and in the Black Gate has become barely sufficient for its proper display, and it is to be hoped that before long a new building better adapted for the purposes of a museum of antiquities may be erected.

## CHAPTER VII.

ROMAN WALL—SUMMER OF 1848 EXPEDITION ALONG THE WALL—COURSE OF LECTURES ON THE WALL BEFORE THE LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY—1849, PILGRIMAGE ALONG THE WALL—LECTURE ON THE WALL AT CHESTER—1851, PUBLICATION OF BOOK ON THE ROMAN WALL—RESOLUTION OF THANKS PASSED BY THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES OF NEWCASTLE—LETTERS FROM FRIENDS RESPECTING THE BOOK—CENTENARY ANNIVERSARY DINNER OF THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES OF LONDON—MEETING OF THE ARCHÆOLOGICAL INSTITUTE AT NEWCASTLE—1852, PAPER ON BREMENIUM—2ND EDITION OF 'THE ROMAN WALL'—M'LAUCHLAN'S SURVEY AND MEMOIR.

IN the spring of 1848 Dr Bruce began to study the Roman Wall. He devoted Saturday afternoons and whole holidays to examining the remains in the neighbourhood of Newcastle and the more distant portions of the Wall.

He had intended visiting Rome during the mid-summer holidays of that year, but was prevented by the revolutions which convulsed nearly the whole of Europe at the time, and therefore he resolved to study the Roman remains in the north of England, and he devoted a considerable time during the summer holidays to exploring the Wall from end to end, taking with him Mr Henry and Mr Charles Richardson, artists, sons of the late Mr T. M. Richardson, and his son Gainsford, who accompanied the party on his pony.

The party started from Newcastle early in the

morning of the 19th of June 1848, carefully following the traces of the Wall westward, and arrived at Chollerford about three in the afternoon. The following letters written to his wife express his gratification on viewing the Roman remains in the neighbourhood of Chollerford :—

“CHOLLERFORD, *June 19th*, 1848.

“Through the good providence of God our journey to-day has been both safe and pleasant. I drove for the first ten miles, and after that, as I was often alighting, I gave the reins to William. Richardson has made two or three very useful and one very beautiful sketch. We got here about three o'clock. Gainsford and I went straight to The Chesters: to our mortification John Clayton is in London, and will be all the week. Miss Clayton was at home; she gave us lunch.

“We have had tea and a pleasant stroll by the side of the river (the North Tyne), and are now ready for bed. This part of the country is most beautiful and, near the river, most fertile. I purpose proceeding to Haltwhistle to-morrow night. I trust you have had a prosperous journey to-day. The weather has been very beautiful; both Gainsford and I are scorched.”

“*June 20th*, 1848.

“I awoke at half-past three and arose; it is a beautiful morning. It is now half-past four, and I am going out for a walk (if I can get out) and to survey a bit of the Wall which I have not seen.

"Proverbs xix. 14<sup>1</sup> fell in the course of my ordinary reading this morning [the anniversary of his wedding-day], and I trust with a grateful heart I thanked God that the 20th June 1833 ever dawned upon me."

*(Half-past seven o'clock.)*

"We should have been off before this, but in my morning's ramble I met with the most perfect piece of the Wall I expect to see between Newcastle and the Solway Firth, in a most beautiful and romantic spot. I came back for H. Richardson to sketch it. Altogether this is a lovely spot, rich, the surface varied, well watered, and well wooded: if you can't get lodgings at Newbiggen you had better come here for a week."

In after years, on going through his papers, he made this annotation:—

"Written on my first visit to Chesters. I well recollect my feelings on the occasion.—19th April 1889."

The party proceeded slowly and with care along the line of the Wall, making full notes in their progress, and Mr Henry Richardson made sketches at the most important points of view. The weather was beautifully fine, and it was sometimes after 11 o'clock at night before they finished the day's march. Long rests were taken at the chief places of interest, and about ten days were occupied in reaching Bowness, the western extremity of the Wall. Although this was the first time Dr Bruce made a systematic survey

<sup>1</sup> "House and riches are the inheritance of fathers: and a prudent wife is from the Lord."



of the Roman Wall, his attention had been directed to it many years before. As a little boy, one Christmas time he was taken out as far as Denton to see the Roman Wall there: he chipped a piece off one of the stones and brought it home and lodged it in one of his drawers as a great curiosity; and in the year 1823, when on his way to college at Glasgow, he noticed that the coach rolled over some hundred yards of the foundations of the Roman Wall, and he then wrote to his friend Mr Woodman:—

“Should I again return home I intend, *Deo volente*, to set out on a pilgrimage in search of the antique, visiting Walltown, &c., and some remnants of Roman roads which still exist.”

And in the year 1830, in a letter written from Rigg on the 6th of November to his brother Edward (set out before at page 40), he speaks of having “surveyed the remains of the Roman Wall” at Bowness.

In the autumn of 1848 Dr Bruce delivered a course of five lectures on the Roman Wall before the Literary and Philosophical Society. The first lecture was delivered on the 15th of November. It commenced with a sketch of the Roman occupation of Britain, and contained a general description of the Wall, its stations and castles, and its military way. The second lecture dealt with other walls of the Roman period, the Devil's Dike in Germany, Graham's Dike in Scotland, and it gave a description of the Wall in its course from Wallsend to Teppermoor. The third lecture continued the local description of the Wall from Sewing Shields to Birdoswald. The fourth lecture gave a local description of the Wall from Birdoswald to its termination at Bowness. It

dealt with the outposts or supporting stations, and gave an account of the troops that garrisoned the Wall. It concluded with the consideration of the question, "Did Severus build the Stone Wall?" The fifth and last lecture was devoted to a description of the remains found near the Wall, including the altars, sepulchral inscriptions, centurial stones, and articles illustrative of the domestic life of the Romans.

The lectures were exceedingly well attended, and were invested with an interest which captivated the audience. Many persons who listened to the lectures were surprised to find that so magnificent a monument of the power of Rome existed within easy reach of their homes, and had remained comparatively unobserved and unnoticed. Dr Bruce, in acknowledging a vote of thanks, expressed the hope that in the summer he would be accompanied by the audience on a pilgrimage along the line of the Wall. In May 1849 an advertisement was inserted in 'The Athenæum' stating that a party of antiquaries residing at Newcastle-upon-Tyne proposed to take an excursion along the site of the famous Roman Wall in the week commencing the 25th June, and would be glad to be joined by some of the antiquaries of the south. The advertisement stated that a programme of the intended route might be had of the curator of the Museum of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, by whom names would be enrolled until the 6th June. The programme, which was prepared by Dr Bruce, was prefaced by some remarks about the attractiveness of the route.

"The route proposed is one of surpassing interest. The great barrier line itself is, without

doubt, the noblest Roman work in Britain, and although many centuries have elapsed since its first erection, its remains yet bear ample witness to the greatness of the power and the sternness of the resolve of the mighty people who erected it. With few interruptions its march may be traced from sea to sea, and in the wilder regions of the district through which it passes the Wall, with its stations and mile castles and earthen ramparts, exhibits a degree of completeness which not only takes the stranger by surprise, but enables him with comparative facility to grasp the design of the engineer in constructing the whole. To the student of mediæval history the whole district is classic ground. Here for four or five centuries two gallant nations were engaged in incessant strife. The numerous fortified dwellings which bestud the country on either side of the Wall indicate a state of society very different from that which now prevails throughout this peaceful region. The curious arrangement of some of these towers and peel-houses will arrest the attention of the party."

The following is the programme :—

*Monday, 25th June.*

Meet at Wallsend at 1 o'clock, examine the station there, trace the Wall in its course to Newcastle, dine at 4 o'clock in the Castle, Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

*Tuesday, 26th June.*

Leave Newcastle at 8 A.M., proceed by the Westgate to Benwell, the Wall at East Denton,

Heddon on the Wall, Rutchester, Harlow Hill (at about 2 o'clock, where lunch), The Vallum at Carr Hill, Halton Chesters, Wall at Brunton, Chollerford, Chesters.

*Wednesday, 27th June.*

Start from Chollerford at 8 o'clock. Walwick Chesters, Towertay, Carrowbrough, Sewing Shields, Housesteads (where dine at about 1 o'clock), Mile Castle at Hotbank, Crag Lake, turn off at west end of lake to Chesterholm, return to the Wall, Cawfields Mile Castle, turn down to Haltwhistle for the night.

*Thursday, 28th June.*

Leave Haltwhistle at 8 o'clock. Great Chesters, King Arthur's Well, Walltown, Caervorran (where dine at about 2 o'clock), Thirlwall Castle, vallum at Wallend, Gilsland, where rest for the night.

*Friday, 29th June.*

Leave Gilsland at 9 A.M., cross the Poltross Burn, cross the Irthing at Willowford, Birdoswald, Lanercost Priory, Naworth Castle (where dine about 2 o'clock), proceed to Carlisle, where rest for the night.

*Saturday, 30th June.*

Meet at Stanwix Church at 9 A.M. Passage of the Eden, Carlisle Cathedral, Castle, Burgh (where dine at 2 o'clock), King Edward's Monument, Drumburgh, Bowness, where rest.

*Monday, 2nd July.*

Take mid-day train from Carlisle to Haydon Bridge, after dinner visit Langley Castle, and returning to Haydon Bridge rest for the night.

*Tuesday, 3rd July.*

Leave Haydon Bridge by train for Corbridge, view the station at Corbridge, thence to Dilston Tower and Hall, return to Newcastle in the evening.

The pilgrims who undertook the whole excursion were about twenty in number, but in addition to these several members of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle and many of the gentry resident near the line of march joined them for a day or two. Further, at some of the most important points the pilgrims, among whom were three ladies, were met by large crowds of the neighbouring population.

The programme was carried out in all its details. The banquet in the Great Hall of the Castle proved to be a most delightful gathering. Dr Bruce, as the leader of the party, occupied the chair, being supported on his right by Captain Wetherley, who was then Mayor of Newcastle, and took great interest in the expedition. Dr Bruce writes :—

“ All went merry as a marriage-bell, while we discussed and rediscussed the eighteen toasts set down for our consideration. On the Tuesday morning we were all on foot by eight o'clock, having breakfasted at our several places of lodgment; and here I may mention, although the greater part of our journey was to be done on foot, a wheeled conveyance accompanied us. This

was a long brake capable of holding the whole of us on an emergency. We required it to carry our extra wraps, our changes of clothing, and to give us a little rest now and then. It was drawn by two horses, which, whatever their names were at the beginning of our pilgrimage, became known to us before the end as Romulus and Remus."

The following passage from the 'Newcastle Courant' refers to the journey taken on the Tuesday by the pilgrims :—

"The day being beautifully fine, the magnificent scenery of the Tyne and the distant hills of Simonside and Cheviot were viewed to great advantage. By the time that the party reached the elevated village of Harlow Hill the calls of hunger drew off their attention for a little time from the works of men who had slumbered in the dust for sixteen or seventeen centuries, but a substantial lunch hastily discussed again put them into a condition for reverting to the object of their journey. At Halton Chesters the body of pilgrims was swelled by a tributary stream of intelligent antiquaries from Hexham, and moved on with as much speed as the extraordinary interest of the way would allow them to the valley of the North Tyne."

Dr Bruce writes :—

"Hurry as we would we did not keep good time. Mr Clayton had kindly invited the whole party to dinner at Chesters at 6 o'clock. Before we began the descent into the valley of the North Tyne we heard the dinner-bell at The Chesters

ring a long and loud peal. Hastening onwards, Cilurnum was at length reached, but not until the station had been examined and the water piers of the Bridge viewed did the party range themselves around the sumptuously furnished board in the dining-room of The Chesters. In order to provide comfortable sleeping accommodation, Mr Clayton laid his friends in the neighbourhood under contribution, and with his usual politeness he personally conducted each of his guests who were not to sleep at his own house to the homes temporarily provided for them before retiring to rest himself."

On Wednesday morning the sun shone out gloriously, and many of the pilgrims were engaged in the early morning in a renewed examination of the station and a careful survey of the treasures preserved in the Antiquity House. Before the party had assembled in marching order, friends from Hexham and other places joined them; and when the cavalcade was set in motion it included, according to the account in 'The Courant,' every species of vehicle, and frequently extended a mile along the road.

At length the pilgrims reached Housesteads, the "Tadmor of Britain." Here again we avail ourselves of the language of the chronicler in 'The Courant':—

"The ancient city is now a huge mass of devastation; its ramparts and gates and streets and suburbs are all distinctly visible, but silence now reigns where for centuries the hum of many voices, the tread of many wayfarers, and the clang of arms, frequently resounded. Not so, however, on the present occasion. Never probably since

the departure of the Romans was the city so numerously tenanted. Many of the neighbouring gentry, all the inhabitants of the surrounding hamlets, and large contributions from Bardon Mill and Haltwhistle, had there assembled in holiday attire and with joyous countenances to welcome the visitants.

Dr Bruce writes :—

“ Before leaving Housesteads I was asked by the assembled throng to explain to them the mysteries of Mithras, and to speak generally about the station and the Wall. This I did as well as I could. I had a similar duty to discharge at Chesterholm, Caervorran, and at other places. Our Hexham visitors were evidently pleased at our temporary companionship, and one of them, Mr J. Ridley, celebrated the occasion in verse. His piece is entitled ‘A day with the pilgrims along the Roman Wall.’ Perhaps I may be allowed to quote a single stanza from it :—

“ ‘ But who can paint the route sublime  
O’er crag and glen, through fen and fields,  
The motley group that dive and climb,  
To Busy-gap and Sewingshields ?

“ ‘ Another march—a halt—and now  
On Borcovicus’ walls we stand :  
Hail, splendid ruin, famous thou  
Great Tadmor of our native land.

“ ‘ Yet here, within that murky cave,  
The blood of bulls and men has flowed ;  
Whilst to the sun the heathen gave  
The homage due alone to God.



“ ‘ Here, too, full oft in later days,  
Yet now remote, ’mid border wars,  
Some hostile clan has scoured these ways,  
Some bold moss-trooper swept the scars.

“ ‘ But Bruce who heads our troop to-day,  
A mild invasion to confer,  
Instructs his pilgrims by the way,—  
Evangelist—Interpreter.’

“ I must not forget to say that before we left Housesteads we showed our loyalty. In my address I had referred to the down-trodden condition of Britain at the time these walls were reared, but stated that now in Windsor’s princely halls was seated a lady who ruled over ‘ regions Cæsar never knew,’ and who wielded a sceptre which was lovingly obeyed by four times the number of subjects great Julius ever swayed. Mr Falconar, one of the pilgrims, proposed three cheers for Queen Victoria, which were given with thrilling effect.”

We cannot follow all the wanderings of the pilgrims; enough to say that everywhere their progress was noted with interest by the country people, and whenever an opportunity occurred hospitality was offered by the gentry and the farmers of the neighbourhood. On Friday, after leaving Gilsland, some of the farmers of Cumberland had been informed that hundreds of antiquaries from Newcastle had determined to march through their cornfields, and they, like true Cumbrians, had determined to offer them resistance. Dr Bruce writes :—

“ Happily no conflict occurred. We, altogether ignorant of the forces which were prepared to

assail us, were wending our way, by the help of Romulus and Remus, along the turnpike road to our night's resting-place at Carlisle."

On Sunday, at Bowness, the pilgrims received every attention from the Rev. John Brown, the incumbent. There they passed the Sunday resting from their labours after spending a week of thorough enjoyment.

On the Monday, as the pilgrims approached Langley Castle, they were surprised to see its battlements thickly manned. On inquiry they found that many of the workmen in the neighbouring smelt-mills had commenced their daily labour at four o'clock in the morning in order to be present at the expected lecture. In these circumstances Dr Bruce, stationing himself in the cavity of an elevated fireplace, addressed a most attentive audience which thronged the space below.

On Tuesday the party visited Dilston, and enjoyed the hospitality of Mr and Mrs Grey of Dilston Hall.

At a meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle held on the 30th December 1885, in discussing the arrangements for a pilgrimage to take place in the summer of 1886, Dr Bruce said—

"In reviewing the excursion of 1849, I am impressed with the idea that such expeditions are valuable as a means of exciting in the minds of the people inhabiting the district through which we pass a sense of the importance of the remains which are the subject of investigation. When Hutton at the beginning of the century, and at the age of 78, traversed the Wall, he

wrote, 'Perhaps I am the first man that ever travelled the whole length of this Wall, and probably the last that ever will attempt it.' Here he was wrong, but certain it is that for many ages few persons took any interest in it. What wonder, then, if the inhabitants of the districts through which it passes used it as a quarry whenever stones were wanted? But when they see that gentlemen of education and cultivated ladies regard it with something like veneration, they will learn to respect it too."

Accounts of the pilgrimage appeared in the leading newspapers of the day, and thus the attention, not only of the people of the North of England, but of antiquaries in all parts of the country, was directed to the importance of the Roman remains on the line of the Wall.

Dr Bruce was asked by Mr Roach Smith to read a paper on some subject connected with the Roman Wall before the British Archæological Association at their Sixth Annual Congress to be held at Chester early in August in the same year. On the evening of the 2nd August 1849 a numerous and influential audience assembled in the Royal Assembly Rooms, Chester, the Dean of Chester in the chair, when Dr Bruce read a paper "On the present state and original design of the Roman Wall which extends from the Tyne to the Solway." According to the report in 'The Times' of August 3—

"The paper was listened to with great attention, and at the conclusion the speaker was loudly cheered."

On the 9th August Mr Roach Smith wrote to Dr Bruce :—

“ I am requested by the President of our Association to desire you to be so kind as to add his name to your list of subscribers to the Roman Wall. His Lordship<sup>1</sup> and all of us entertain the most grateful feelings for the goodwill with which you assisted so effectually the objects of the late Congress. We are all once more at home, and the Chester meeting is, I assure you, embalmed amongst the most pleasing of our recollections.”

The Chester Congress was the means of introducing Dr Bruce to Mr Roach Smith and Mr Albert Way, two learned archæologists, and was the beginning of a lifelong friendship. At this Congress also he made the acquaintance of Lord Albert Conyngham, afterwards Lord Londesborough, a nobleman who took great interest in antiquarian pursuits and afforded Dr Bruce encouragement in his literary labours. Mr Albert Way was an accomplished scholar, a man of great refinement and erudition, and for him Dr Bruce entertained the highest respect. Mr Way enjoyed the confidence of the Duke of Northumberland and acted as the Duke's adviser in matters relating to archæological research.

Dr Bruce, after the Chester Congress, spent most of his leisure in preparing his book on 'The Roman Wall,' but as this was very limited the work proceeded slowly. He was still busily occupied with the management of his school, and it was only in the evenings and during holidays that he was able to devote attention to the book. He took frequent

<sup>1</sup> Lord Londesborough.

opportunities in holiday time of visiting the Wall, and verifying and confirming the results of his former examinations. To secure accuracy he read over many of the proof-sheets on the spot which they describe. He devoted great attention to the pictorial illustrations of the book, and had many lithographs executed from the drawings by Mr Henry Richardson, which were not only remarkable for their fidelity, but were beautiful as works of art. He took great pains in the examination of the drawings and woodcuts of the inscribed stones in order to ensure that the letters and the markings on the stones were correctly delineated. He spared no trouble in visiting the collections of inscribed stones at Alnwick, at The Chesters, and at other places, and made careful enquiries to ascertain the exact locality where the various stones had been found. In the pursuit of these objects he was brought into frequent communication with the Duke of Northumberland, Mr John Clayton, and many other persons who took an interest in antiquities. Mr Clayton afforded him in many ways most valuable assistance in the compilation of the book. He never failed to give him a warm welcome at The Chesters, and was always ready in the elucidation of any doubtful point to place his sound judgment and varied stores of antiquarian learning at his service. Mr Clayton defrayed the cost of woodcuts illustrative of the antiquities preserved at The Chesters; and wood-engravings of objects of interest in the museum at Alnwick Castle were prepared for the book at the instance of the Duke of Northumberland. Mr Albert Way, Mr John Fenwick, and Mr William Kell all contributed some illustrations to the book, so that at a com-

paratively moderate cost Dr Bruce was able to produce, although not without some pecuniary loss, a volume very handsomely illustrated.

During the autumn of 1849 Mr Albert Way spent a day on the Wall with Dr Bruce, and on 27th November he wrote to him expressing the pleasure the excursion had given him.

“I regretted much to have only a moment to shake you by the hand the other morning, and to be unable to assure you how lively a gratification I had derived through your friendly attentions and kind guidance. The impressions of the memorable day I had the satisfaction of passing with you are of unmixed pleasure and interest. The importance of the great work grew upon me, and I may say *grows*, for it is only on maturer reflections that so young a pilgrim can fully appreciate it. But not less lively, I assure you, is my grateful sense of your kindness to the stranger to whom you afforded so high a gratification.”

The book approached completion in the last days of the year 1850, and on the 1st of January 1851 Dr Bruce wrote in the preface as follows:—

“It is with no ordinary emotion that I write the last lines of a work to the preparation of which I have devoted the leisure of three years.”

The first copy of the book he sent to his wife with this letter:—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,  
Jan. 2nd, 1851.

“At length I send you a copy of the book. It has cost me much labour, and has been the innocent cause of much annoyance to you. You have,

however, been a very good and very patient wife—I do not think I shall again engage in a similar undertaking. I am somewhat thankful that it is done, that Providence has spared my life and given me help to accomplish it.”

The book formed an octavo volume of 450 pages. Part I. gave an epitome of the history of the Roman occupation in Britain. Part II. contained a general description of the line of the Wall, giving plans, sections, and elevations to explain the construction of the Wall and the vallum. Part III., the main portion of the work, contained a detailed description of the fortification commencing at Wallsend and proceeding westward to Bowness. Part IV. dealt with the supporting stations of the Wall. In Part V. the question “Who built the Wall?” was discussed. Part VI. contained a description of the more important miscellaneous antiquities found on the line of the Wall. The book was printed at Newcastle, Dr Bruce wishing to demonstrate that the artistic and typographical resources of his native town were equal to the production of a handsome volume. The writer of a review in ‘The Morning Chronicle’ of 11th August 1851 said—

“The getting up of this volume is a credit to Newcastle. Nothing so pictorial has appeared since Bewick’s days.”

The book was inscribed—

“To JOHN CLAYTON, ESQ.,  
THE PROPRIETOR OF THE MOST  
SPLENDID REMAINS OF THE  
ROMAN BARRIER IN NORTHUMBERLAND,  
WHOSE ANTIQUARIAN INTELLIGENCE AND  
CLASSICAL LEARNING HAVE BEEN MOST  
PROFUSELY AND KINDLY AFFORDED TO THE AUTHOR.”

A characteristic letter was written by Mr Clayton in answer to a request by Dr Bruce to be allowed to dedicate the book to him.

“WESTGATE ST., 11th Oct. 1849.

“MY DEAR SIR,—It must necessarily be gratifying to me to have my name associated in any way with so valuable an addition as you are about to make to our knowledge of the Roman Wall, yet I would take the liberty of suggesting that some titled name might be more ornamental to your pages. — I remain, always yours sincerely,  
JOHN CLAYTON.”

The book had a most favourable reception not only from antiquaries but from the general public, and was speedily recognised as a work of authority. The numerous complimentary letters from his friends and the favourable reception of the book by the public and the press greatly gratified the author.

A few extracts illustrate the general tone of the letters.

Dr Daniel Wilson of Edinburgh, afterwards of the University of Toronto, in a letter written on the 20th June 1851, says :—

“I now beg to congratulate you on so creditable and satisfactory a conclusion to your labours. It is a work which will give your name a permanent place in British antiquarian literature.”

The Duke of Northumberland wrote :—

“Jan. 25, 1851. I congratulate you on the appearance of your work, and I do so with much sincerity, for not only is it interesting in the



choice and execution of your illustrations, but your manner of treating the subject of the Roman Wall makes the book as agreeable to the reader as it is valuable to the library."

At the anniversary meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, held January 1851, the cordial thanks of the meeting were accorded to Dr Bruce

"for a book tending so greatly to enhance the archæological reputation of the North."

Mr Robert Chambers wrote from Edinburgh a letter which contained the following passage:—

"Feb. 20, 1857. You have accomplished your task, as far as I can judge from an imperfect reading, with great fidelity, and as more obviously appears, with all the desirable accompaniments of taste and elegance. I trust that the public appreciation of your labours will be such as to afford you some remuneration for them; but I have no doubt that the sense of having produced a permanent record of a most interesting remnant of antiquity, and thus provided for the gratification of many yet unborn, will be, failing all others if they do fail, a sufficient reward."

Mr Lucas, the editor of 'The Tablet,' wrote on the 13th October 1851—

"I could not resist the temptation of taking this opportunity of thanking you for the amusement and instruction I have derived from your laborious work."

The notice which appeared in the 'Journal' of the Archæological Institute stated—

"The Roman Wall, too little known, we believe, to the archæologists of southern counties, has supplied a theme to several writers of note in antiquarian literature. Their treatises are, however, beyond the reach of general readers, being given in voluminous works, costly and of uncommon occurrence. Following the impulse of a fresh interest in remains of the Roman age recently excited amongst English archæologists, Mr Bruce has now supplied a desideratum in antiquarian literature by producing a treatise in which he has happily combined much of the information gathered by previous writers with a mass of original and personal observations. The enthusiasm with which he prosecutes his subject has invested it with a charm to which few readers can be insensible."

The Society of Antiquaries of London, on the 23rd of April 1851, held a Centenary Anniversary Dinner in Freemasons' Hall. Dr Bruce accepted an invitation, and was greatly pleased with his reception there. Lord Mahon, the president of the Society, was in the chair, and the Duke of Northumberland and many distinguished persons were present. The following extract, from a letter written by Dr Bruce to his wife, gives some account of the dinner :—

"LONDON, *April 23rd*, 1851.

"I got here safely and comfortably last night. I put up at the Newcastle house, the 'Castle and Falcon'; it is a most comfortable inn. Well, the

great dinner is over. I have reason to be rejoiced that I came. The Duke sought me out amongst the party before dinner, and introduced me to several of the leading persons. In the speech of the night by Lord Mahon my name was honourably mentioned, and our Duke, on his health being given, alluded to the antiquities of Northumberland and my 'delightful volume.'

"A review of my book for the 'Literary Gazette' has been in type for a fortnight. The notice in 'Chambers's Journal' will appear in about four weeks. There will, in due time, be reviews in the 'Scotsman' and the 'Edinburgh Courant.'"

Early in September 1852 the Archæological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland met at Newcastle. The meeting was very numerous attended. Lord Talbot de Malahide, the Earl of Carlisle, the Rev. C. H. Hartshorne, and many distinguished antiquaries attended the meeting. Excursions were made to Alnwick and Warkworth. The Duke of Northumberland offered princely hospitality, and exerted himself to promote the success of the meeting. There was an excursion to Housesteads (Borcovicus), where Mr John Clayton entertained at luncheon a large and distinguished party. Dr Bruce acted as leader of the party, and explained the objects of antiquity most worthy of notice.

At a meeting held in the large assembly room at Newcastle, Dr Bruce read a paper on High Rochester, the ancient *Bremenium*, where excavations had been carried on at the expense of the Duke of Northumberland, the Lord of the Manor. The excavations,

although carried on over a limited area only, disclosed many matters of importance.

Bremenium is interesting as being an outlying station to the north of the Wall, planted on its site in order to guard the Watling Street in its passage across the River Rede and through the mountain pass which it traverses shortly after attaining the north bank of the river. The station stood at an elevation of 950 feet above the sea, and, being in an exposed position, differed in many particulars from the stations on the line of the Wall.

The Duke determined to have the excavations continued more methodically and to a further extent.

The following is a copy of a letter from his Grace to Dr Bruce relating to this :—

“ALNWICK CASTLE, 21st September 1852.

“You will be pleased to learn that, encouraged by the prospect of the knowledge to be gained by laying open the station of Bremenium, also in order to encourage a taste for antiquity and the history of the Romans, the ancient possessors of this land, I had (previously to the receipt of your letter) made arrangements with Mr Hugh Taylor to open Bremenium on a system which should completely lay it open for public inspection. And should Mr H. Taylor communicate with you on the subject, may I beg you kindly to assist him in this useful work.”

Further excavations were accordingly carried out, and the discoveries made formed the subject of a paper read by Dr Bruce before the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle in December 1855. This paper

contained an elaborate account of the work, and was illustrated by numerous plans and sections. It is printed in 'Archæologia Æliana,' new series, vol. i. p. 69.

So well was the first edition of 'The Roman Wall' received, and so great was the demand for it, that in October of the same year a second edition was in the press, and in December 1852 the new edition was published. The preface to this edition concluded with the following passage :—

"I again commit the result of many anxious yet pleasant hours to the impartial criticism of the world of letters, and I do so hopefully, having a lively sense of the indulgence with which the former edition was received, and a thorough conviction of the great and increasing interest of the subject of which it has been my good fortune to treat."

Mr Clayton, upon receiving a copy of the second edition of 'The Roman Wall,' wrote to Dr Bruce—

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, *December 4, 1852.*

"Your autograph and the memory of friendship will render the beautiful volume you have been kind enough to send me doubly precious.

"I have gone through all the additions which have been made to the original work, and they appear to be highly satisfactory.

"Our noble friend, the Duke, must be gratified with the attention which has been paid to Bremenium, which is skilfully and agreeably dealt with."

The Duke caused the survey to be engraved and printed for private distribution in 1857, and it forms a most valuable record of the course and direction of the Roman Wall, and of the exact positions and dimensions of the stations and camps connected with it.

In 1858 a memoir, written by Mr MacLauchlan during the survey, was printed for private circulation. This memoir forms an important supplement to the 'Survey of the Roman Wall,' and contains a description of things which cannot be shown on the plan. Dr Bruce took a great interest in the work and rendered what help he could, and in his memoir Mr MacLauchlan acknowledged his obligations to him.

## CHAPTER VIII.

1855, DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND SUGGESTS THAT A COMPLETE CATALOGUE BE PREPARED OF THE WHOLE OF THE INSCRIBED STONES FOUND IN NORTHUMBERLAND—1857, ILLUSTRATED CATALOGUE OF INSCRIBED STONES IN MUSEUM AT NEWCASTLE—ROMAN AQUEDUCTS—"THORNGRAFTON FIND"—1860, LECTURES ON ROMAN COINS—1863, HANDBOOK TO 'ROMAN WALL'—1862, LETTERS FROM LORD RAVENSWORTH—1867, 3RD EDITION OF 'ROMAN WALL'—1872, DISCOVERY OF THE PILES OF THE ROMAN BRIDGE OVER THE TYNE AT NEWCASTLE—1873, LECTURES ON THE WALL OF HADRIAN WITH SPECIAL REFERENCE TO RECENT DISCOVERIES—1875, PUBLICATION OF 'LAPIDARIUM SEPTENTRIONALE'—1877, PRESENTATION OF PLATE TO DR BRUCE BY THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES OF NEWCASTLE—1876, DISCOVERY OF COVENTINA'S FOUNTAIN—1886, SECOND PILGRIMAGE ALONG THE WALL—VISITS TO THE WALL BY LORD STANHOPE, THE DEAN OF WESTMINSTER, THE SOCIAL SCIENCE CONGRESS, AND THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY—LETTER FROM MR HOWARD OF CORBY.

In the autumn of 1855 the Duke of Northumberland conceived the idea of having a series of engravings of the whole of the Roman inscribed stones found in Northumberland published by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle. His Grace proposed to contribute largely to the expense of the engravings, and suggested that Dr Bruce should undertake the labour of obtaining copies of the inscriptions and superintending the publication of the work. The publication of the 'Lapidarium Septentrionale' in the year 1875 was the result. The letters which follow relate to the early plans for the issue of the book, the completion of which involved some years of labour.

am sure than your zealous interest in this great chapter of Roman antiquity, and your high appreciation of his Grace's munificent encouragement of the investigation thereof, will make you ready to carry out."

We shall have to revert to the subject of the 'Lapidarium' hereafter, but it is considered that the letters relating to the first conception of the work are not without interest, and it is convenient to refer to them in order of date.

In February 1856 Dr Bruce was appointed one of the secretaries of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, the duties of which office he zealously discharged until January 1883, when he was elected a vice-president of the Society, a position which he held until his death in 1892.

In January 1857 Dr Bruce finished the Catalogue of the Inscribed and Sculptured Roman Stones in the possession of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle. It was printed in Vol. I., New Series, of the 'Archæologia Æliana,'<sup>1</sup> and handsomely illustrated by woodcuts.

At the annual meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, held on the 2nd of February this year, the members dined together in the Castle. Mr Clayton was in the chair, and in proposing the health of Dr Bruce he alluded to his recent completion of the illustrated Catalogue of the Roman Antiquities. In reply, Dr Bruce said—

"there was no work of his to which he attached more importance than this Catalogue. He was

<sup>1</sup> A second edition of this Catalogue was published in 1887 with additions up to date, and is contained in Vol. XII. 'Archæologia Æliana.'



proud to think that it was the work of an association of private individuals, with no State aid, no pecuniary assistance beyond their own annual guineas. Of themselves they had brought together a collection of antiquities, illustrating one of the most important and interesting periods in the history of their country, the like of which nowhere else existed in the world. He often went, he confessed, to the British Museum for the pleasure of beholding its poverty in all things relating to British antiquities. And he came back to Newcastle Museum to make himself proud in beholding the difference."

A careful study of the methods adopted by the Romans for the supply of water to their large towns and military stations confirmed Dr Bruce in the view that those practical people, with their genius for adapting means to the desired end, determined that economy and safety were to be found in aqueducts rather than in pipes conveying water under pressure with the constant liability to leakage and other accidents; this opinion he expressed in the following letter to Mr Way:—

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 5th January 1859.

"I was yesterday upon a most interesting expedition to examine the sources from which the Whittle Dean water-works (west of Harlow Hill) derive their supply, and the channels in which it runs.

"The Romans were right in constructing aqueducts in preference to bringing their supplies of water into the city by pipes. The Whittle Dean

Water Company would have saved half their capital, besides deriving other advantages, if they had acted upon the Roman principle."

The following letter refers to what was popularly known as the "Thorngrafton Find."

(To his Wife.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 11th February 1859.

"I went to Mr Clayton's on Wednesday night and had a particularly pleasant chat. One of the coins in his much prized 'Thorngrafton Find' had given him much trouble, and was likely to endanger the value of the whole as being later than the rest. Fairless tells me that twenty-one years ago he gave this coin and 2s. 6d. to the man who had the 'find' for one of the real coins. This bit of information was a great boon to Mr Clayton."

This has reference to the discovery of a small casket of coins in the Thorngrafton Quarry on the hill of Barcombe. The circumstances are sufficiently interesting to be related at some length. The hill rises above Fourstones Station, and is not far from the Roman Stations of Vindolana and Borcovicus. It is composed to a great extent of fine sandstone well fitted for building, and there are traces on the hillside of old quarries where stone was won for the building of the Roman Wall. The stone used at Housesteads and on the parts of the Wall adjacent is of the same character as the Barcombe stone. When the railway from Newcastle to Carlisle was laid out the demand arose for stone sleepers on which

to lay the rails, and the quarrymen visited the old quarries of Barcombe.

In the month of August 1837, Thomas Pattison and some other workmen were working in one of these old quarries. On removing a mass of stone chippings they saw hid in a cleft of the rock a skiff-shaped casket with a circular handle, so as to adapt it for being carried on the arm. The quarrymen found the casket to contain sixty-three Roman coins. Three of them were gold, the rest silver. The workmen proposed an immediate division of the spoil. It fortunately occurred to Thomas Pattison that the coins would bring a larger sum if kept together than if sold piecemeal. His companions agreed that he should be entrusted with the entire “find,” on condition that they should share the proceeds of the sale.

Mr Fairless of Hexham, a well-known antiquary, hearing of the discovery, at once sought an interview with Pattison. The quarryman by this time had become chary of his treasure, and it was only after much persuasion that Pattison was induced to allow Mr Fairless to see the coins; but at length, in a private room at the White Hart Inn, Hexham, Mr Fairless was allowed to examine the coins leisurely. He arranged them according to their reigns, and took the number belonging to each emperor: there were about ten coins he could not identify.

The news that some gold and silver coins had been found in the Thorngraston Quarry, which forms part of the Barony of Wark of which the Duke of Northumberland is lord, came to the knowledge of the agents of the Duke. They took care to inform Pattison that by the law of treasure-trove the coins were

the property of his Grace. Pattison gave no heed to their demands; the more pressing the agents of the Duke became, the more resolutely he resolved to hold the prize. He had been told that if he would give up the coins to the Duke he would meet with generous treatment from his Grace. Pattison resolved that if the coins were to be given up to the Duke at all, he would himself personally place them in his hand. He had a brother who kept a public-house at Morpeth, and the two men set off on their travels to Alnwick for the purpose of having an interview with the Duke. Hugh, the third Duke of Northumberland, was at this time the bearer of the title: he was a man of the most kindly disposition, but the state of his health rendered it desirable that he should be disturbed as little as possible by the details of business. When, therefore, Thomas Pattison and his brother arrived at Alnwick Castle and asked for an interview with the Duke, they were introduced to the commissioner for the management of his Grace's estates, who expressed his readiness to enter upon any business which required the attention of the Duke. Thomas Pattison, however, declined all discussion but with the Duke himself, and so trudged home again, chagrined and disappointed, more firmly determined than before never to give up the coins.

The law agents of the Duke would now brook no delay. An action at the suit of the Duke was brought against Pattison in the Court of Queen's Bench, and the defendant having suffered judgment to pass by default, a writ of enquiry to assess the damages was executed at the Anchor Inn, Haydon Bridge, before Mr Gibson, the under-Sheriff for Northumberland, and a jury. The jury returned a verdict for £18 damages.

Pattison disappeared from the country and for some time was not heard of. After a while he was discovered in Denbighshire, and was lodged in Denbigh gaol as a debtor to the extent of £18 and costs. When Pattison had lain some time in Denbigh gaol, the matter was brought to the notice of the Duke of Northumberland, and an offer was made to Pattison of a release from imprisonment. He, however, declined to be released, being aware of a statute then in force by which it was provided that a debtor imprisoned for a sum not exceeding £20 should not be held in custody for a longer period than twelve calendar months. On the 30th April 1839, Pattison, pursuant to the terms of the statute, was discharged from custody on his own application. He returned to the North. His mind was soured. He never afterwards did a day's work, but wandered restlessly over the country, and soon sank into the grave.

Pattison never removed the coins from the custody of his brother William. William Pattison, like his brother, was an impracticable man. Many persons who came to see the coins were refused permission to do so.

Dr Bruce writes—

“When the pilgrim band of which I was the leader traversed in 1849 the Roman Wall, William Pattison lay upon a bank near his dwelling as we passed that way, with the coins upon his person. It is said that had he been asked he would then have shown them. None of us, however, knew of his intention or knew of his being in our neighbourhood. He was disgusted at the slight which we had unintentionally put upon him, and went home determined that none of ‘thor

pulgrims' should have another chance. When I was preparing my first edition of my work upon the Roman Wall, I was anxious to give in it an account of the 'Thorngraston Find,' accompanied by engravings of the series of coins. With this object in view I requested Mr John Storey, the artist, to call upon William Pattison and ask him to allow him to draw the vessel and its contents: the request was firmly and perseveringly refused. In this extremity I applied to Mr Fairless. I knew the power of his mild persuasive eloquence and of his gentle winning manner. He went to the man and succeeded in getting permission to take sealing-wax impressions of all the coins. From these impressions the engravings of the pieces given in the first and second editions of my work upon the Wall were prepared."

The "Thorngraston Find" was considered to be of considerable historical value as affording a cogent argument that the Wall was built in the time of Hadrian. Amongst the coins are several belonging to the times of the Republic. These are much worn. Then there is an Imperial series nearly complete from Claudius down to Hadrian. The fact is important that the series finishes with Hadrian, and at an early period of his reign. The coins of Trajan, the immediate predecessor of Hadrian, are very numerous. There are fourteen of Trajan's reign, and only four which bear the impress of Hadrian. "Now," said Dr Bruce,

"this is exactly the state of things that we should expect to find in the year 120, the year

in which Hadrian came to Britain, after having been only three years on the throne. The coins of Trajan are in excellent preservation, those of Hadrian are as fresh as when they first left the mint. These facts enable us to turn round upon those who maintain that Severus built the Wall and say, 'Here is the quarry from which the Wall in this part of its course was built,—when was it wrought?' These coins give us an answer—'In the reign of Hadrian.' If Severus had built the Wall, some of the coins of that emperor, and very many of those of the Antonines, who succeeded Hadrian, would have had a place in the 'Thorngraston Find.'"

Mr Clayton, with the advice and assistance of Mr Fairless, in the autumn of the year 1858 succeeded in acquiring the treasure. Mr Clayton obtained an interview with William Pattison at a small farm near the river Tippalt, taking with him fifty new bright sovereigns. After a long discussion, Mr Clayton with great satisfaction exchanged the sovereigns for the casket with its three gold pieces and sixty silver coins. He then wrote to Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland, requesting to know his pleasure respecting the ultimate destination of the coins, and received an answer dated from Alnwick Castle, 17th November 1858 :—

"MY DEAR SIR,—I am delighted that the 'Thorngraston Find' is in your possession ; it could not be in more worthy hands. It may add to the treasures of the Chesters Museum, but it cannot add to the pleasures that Chesters and its

hospitable inmates always give your friends.—I am, my dear sir, yours faithfully,

“NORTHUMBERLAND.”

Great was the rejoicing among the antiquaries of the district when it became known that the coins had been brought from their hiding-place. Those who advocated the claims of Hadrian to the honour of building the Roman wall were especially jubilant at the thought that the “Thorngraston Find” was safe. With glee they began to examine and re-examine this convincing proof of the claims of Hadrian.

Suddenly this glee had a check. The cause of their perplexity was a little ugly coin which neither Mr Fairless nor Dr Bruce could make out from the sealing-wax impression taken by Mr Fairless. Mr Clayton had the pieces one by one minutely examined, and the coin in question, after some discussion, was found to be one belonging to the reign of Caracalla, and of the year A.D. 217.

This circumstance was a provoking one. Had the objectionable piece been one of Severus, that would have been bad enough; but that a coin belonging to the reign of the successor of Severus should have obtruded itself among pieces ending at the third year of Hadrian's reign was still more unpalatable to the advocates of the claims of Hadrian.

Day broke at last; the mystery was solved. Mr Fairless, learning of the perplexity this coin had caused, wrote to Dr Bruce detailing the following facts. When he first saw the coins he felt sure that Thomas Pattison would soon disperse them. He was desirous of procuring one of them to place in his cabinet as a memorial of the “Find.” Pattison declared his deter-



mination not to break the lot. Mr Fairless pressed his request. At length the following compromise was made. Mr Fairless was to take one of the silver coins of the "Find" and replace it with one from his own cabinet. He was, besides, to give Pattison half-a-crown. This was done. Mr Fairless selected one of the most interesting coins in the series—a "Judæa Capta" of Vespasian—and filled up the vacancy with a coin which he was not particularly anxious to retain. Mr Fairless kept the whole transaction a profound secret. It was not until the coins came into the possession of Mr Clayton, and that gentleman's right to them became clearly established, that he divulged the matter and restored to its right place the coin which he had held so long.

In December 1860 Dr Bruce gave a course of three lectures before the Literary and Philosophical Society on Roman coins, their historical, architectural, and artistic value. The coins referred to during the lectures were a series furnished by the Duke of Northumberland, a selection from the cabinet of Mr John Clayton, and a few in Dr Bruce's possession. The interest of the lectures was enhanced by drawings showing how the inscriptions and figures on the coins illustrated the history and customs of the Roman people, and helped the historian to a full description of rites and ceremonies and of the dates of events otherwise uncertain.

In the same year, 1860, Dr Bruce was elected a vice-president of the Literary and Philosophical Society—an honour which he highly appreciated and continued to enjoy during his lifetime.

In the year 1862 Dr Bruce devoted most of his time to the careful description of the inscribed and sculp-

tured stones of the Roman era which had been found in the North of England. This work was necessary for the compilation of 'The Lapidarium,' and was also to some extent required in the preparation of the third edition of 'The Roman Wall.' He had besides in hand a handbook to 'The Roman Wall'—a small book entitled 'The Wallet Book,' intended for the field, not for the library table. It did not purport to describe the various objects visited, but to inform the traveller what to look for and where to find it.

'The Wallet Book' was issued in 1863. It was speedily sold, and a second edition, entitled 'The Handbook to the Roman Wall,' was published in 1884, which was exhausted in a few weeks after its issue. A third edition was published in 1885. In 1891 it was intended to issue a fourth edition, but before this could be prepared for the press Dr Bruce died. It was edited by his friend Mr Blair, F.S.A., who had gone along the course of the Wall with Dr Bruce to verify the statements in the third edition, and was published four years after Dr Bruce's death.

The following letter from the second Baron Ravensworth, afterwards created Earl of Ravensworth, to Dr Bruce speaks for itself.

"DURHAM CASTLE, *September 21, 1862.*

"DEAR DR BRUCE,—Has the second edition of your work on the Roman Wall come out? You will be interested to hear that I have promised the Duc de Morny to send him a copy of your book as a present from me to the Emperor of the French. If I can't get a copy of the second edition, I shall be obliged to part with my own large paper subscription copy with your

autograph, which will be very much *contre gré*; but still an offering to such high quarters must be made with acceptance.

“Please write me a line to Eslington, where I propose to return on Tuesday, and if your second edition is printed, have the goodness to order a copy to be forwarded to me forthwith, as Monsieur de Morny only purposes to remain a few more days in this country. You are aware the Emperor is engaged in writing the ‘Life and Campaigns of Julius Cæsar,’ and it is not improbable that some of the information to be derived from your researches may be valuable to his Majesty as illustrative of the genius for colonisation exhibited by these wonderful Romans.

—Yours faithfully, RAVENSWORTH.

“DR COLLINGWOOD BRUCE”

The second edition was out of print, but Dr Bruce’s own quarto copy of this edition was forwarded to Eslington, and the following acknowledgment was received :—

“ESLINGTON PARK, *September 25, 1862.*

“DEAR DR BRUCE,—A thousand thanks for your prompt and most generous acquiescence with my request, but it would be unpardonable in me to deprive you of a favourite volume to discharge an obligation of my own. I have therefore *non sine questio* forwarded to his Imperial Majesty my own subscription copy (large paper) of the first edition with your autograph—a sacrifice which I have especially pointed out to the Duc de Morny, through whom

the volume will be presented to the Emperor; and I keep in pledge your quarto of the second edition, which you may redeem when you like, either by coming here to get it or by notifying to me that a third edition is about to issue from the press.—Faithfully yours,

“RAVENSWORTH.”

At the invitation of Mr Clayton, Dr Bruce met at the Chesters, in 1862, Mr Augustus Hare, who was then engaged in writing ‘Murray’s Handbook to Northumberland and Durham.’ He had several interviews with Mr Hare, and rendered him all the assistance in his power, which was acknowledged by Mr Hare in the following letter:—

“HOLMHURST, HASTINGS, 1st July 1863.

“I have just returned home, and hasten to send you a thousand thanks for your great kindness in taking so much trouble about my MS., and the valuable corrections you have sent me. I shall be most glad to act upon *all your hints*, and am truly delighted that my work has your approbation, which will be of more value to me than that of any number of reviews.”

During the year 1865 Dr Bruce was mainly occupied in preparing the third edition of ‘The Roman Wall.’ He was exceedingly anxious to make the book perfect in all its details, and he spared no pains in revising the text and in getting exact representations of the inscribed stones, and in making out accurate translations of the inscriptions. The letters which follow indicate how laboriously and painfully he worked at the revision of the book.

(To his Wife.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 27th June 1865.

"Yesterday I worked at my book, but oh, it is hard work. It would be far easier to write a new one. But I have this satisfaction, that so far as I have gone it is as good as I can make it.

"This morning I have been working at my 'Wall,' and have made some way with it; but the printers are all off at the races. . . ."

(To his Son, Gainsford.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 3rd August 1865.

"We had a pleasant meeting of the Anti-quarian Society at the castle last night.

"I expect to spend a week upon the Wall with Mr Mossman to gather up the remaining inscriptions.

"My work to-day has been to re-write and abridge the work of the two previous days—I speak of my book. I expect it will be a good book in the end, but it costs great labour."

The next letter shows the value Dr Bruce attached to the assistance afforded by Mr Clayton in the final correction of the proofs of the third edition of 'The Roman Wall.'

(To his Son, Gainsford.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 29th December 1865.

"The printers are rather at a standstill just now, but I am working away. I hope to finish Borcovicus to-night. I have just got some proofs back from Mr Clayton. His alterations show minute attention and considerable acuteness. I

will perhaps call upon him this evening. As to your movements next week, I quite approve of your coming to Durham on Saturday evening and staying there until the close of the sessions. A Sabbath day spent in holy quiet and the fear of God will brace you for the events of the week, be they prosperous or adverse. Seek the help of God and you will be guided aright. At the best we are unprofitable servants; but if we trifle with the Lord's Day we may expect rebukes. I hope, wish, trust, and pray that the year which will probably have dawned upon you before I see you may be a year of special blessing to you."

In January 1867 it was with great satisfaction that Dr Bruce was able to publish the third edition of 'The Roman Wall' in quarto form, a few copies being printed in folio. He stated in the preface—

"The author has endeavoured to bring the work up to the present state of our knowledge upon the subject. Since the appearance of the last edition, the survey of the Wall executed by Mr MacLauchlan, under the auspices of the late Duke of Northumberland, has been completed, and extensive excavations have been carried on at High Rochester, Housesteads, and Carlisle. The information derived from these and similar sources has been so abundant as to render it necessary, notwithstanding the increased size of the book, to condense the old material to make room for new. Thus the present edition of 'The Roman Wall' appears before the public as almost a new work."

The book was magnificently illustrated, and the whole edition was speedily sold.

Dr Bruce watched carefully the excavations that were carried on on any part of the Roman Wall, and he made frequent visits to The Chesters to watch the progress of the excavations there. He wrote to his wife on December 3rd, 1867 :—

“THE CHESTERS.

“Yesterday was a bitterly cold day; we got here pretty comfortably notwithstanding, and met with the usual kind reception. Nothing very striking has turned up at the diggings; still I like to watch the work.”

In 1869 excavations were still being carried on at The Chesters, and in June of that year Dr Bruce visited Mr Clayton to superintend the making of drawings of the newly excavated work. He writes to his wife :—

“Mr Mossman has been drawing away all day at the newly excavated gateway, and I have been a good deal with him.”

During the spring tides at the end of March 1872, the foundations of the third pier of the stone bridge over the Tyne, reckoning from the Gateshead side, were removed. Dr Bruce, being anxious to ascertain whether any traces of Roman work could be found, obtained permission to be present at the operation.

Towards the close of A.D. 119 the Emperor Hadrian visited Britain, and among other works which he ordered to be executed was a bridge which spanned the Tyne at Newcastle. The ancient name of Newcastle, Pons Ælii, was derived from this bridge. In

1248 the bridge, which no doubt in its upper parts was constructed of timber, was consumed by a raging fire; great efforts were made to retrieve the disaster, and in the thirteenth century a new bridge was erected which we may call the mediæval bridge. This bridge was destroyed by a flood in 1771, and was replaced by a stone bridge in 1775. In 1872 it became necessary to remove this bridge in order to construct the present swing bridge to enable large vessels to pass up the river to the Elswick works and other places above the bridge.

At the time Dr Bruce made his inspection, in consequence of the improvements which had been already effected in the river the low-water mark was one yard lower at Newcastle than it used to be. This circumstance made it possible to view the foundations to great advantage.

“Resting upon the framework of the pier, we stood in a manner *high and dry* upon what for ages had been the natural bed of the river, the stream still flowing past us on either side.”

The first thing noticed was the piling of the stone bridge. Bay piles twelve inches square had been driven into the bed of the river, and immediately inside of them were sheeting piles six inches thick closely grooved into each other. On the space thus enclosed the foundation of the pier was laid. When the foundations were laid bare, timbers which were part of the piling of the mediæval bridge were observed. In addition to the timbers which had been laid down to form the foundation of the stone bridge of the last century, and of the bridge of the thirteenth century, other timbers were to be discerned within the area of the modern pier which must have been used



for the foundations of the bridge of Hadrian. The Roman oak was jet black, the outside of it friable, and the heart strong but fibrous. The oak of the mediæval foundation was slimy, with a greenish tint of decay about one inch deep from the surface, the heart solid and of a brown colour. The timber of last century was quite fresh. The Roman piles were drawn, as were the other piles. The Roman piles with one exception were without a shoe, but the points were broken and torn, leading to the supposition that the shoe had become a mass of oxidised iron which the partially decayed timber could not bring away with it. On the 3rd of April 1872 Dr Bruce read before the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle a paper on "The Three Bridges, Roman, Mediæval, and Modern, over the Tyne at Newcastle." In this paper he gave a minute account of the foundations of the three bridges, illustrated by drawings and plans. He afterwards printed the substance of the paper with illustrations, including a very beautiful etching of the mediæval bridge, by T. M. Richardson.

Dr Bruce was able to secure a portion of the piles of the Roman bridge and a portion of the piles of the mediæval bridge, and he had a cabinet made of this old oak in which he kept a folio copy of 'The Roman Wall' and his copy of 'Hodgson's Northumberland,' and other choice books which he specially prized.

He alludes to this oak in a letter to his son, Gainsford:—

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 4th April 1872.

"I am almost at a standstill with the 'Lapidarium'; I am stopped for woodcuts, and besides that the Easter holidays have thrown things out of gear at the printing-office.

"I have got some more black oak taken out of the foundation of Hadrian's bridge over the Tyne. We saw distinctly the foundation of the Roman, the mediæval, and the more modern bridge. The timber, however, must be dried very gradually; it will not be ready for working up into furniture for a twelvemonth. We shall have plenty of time, therefore, to fix upon designs."

On the 3rd and 5th November 1873 Dr Bruce delivered before the Literary and Philosophical Society two lectures on "The Wall of Hadrian, with especial Reference to Recent Discoveries." They described the internal arrangements of the Roman stations, based upon the remains disclosed by the recent excavations at The Chesters. They dealt with the suburban dwellings outside the stations, and gave an account of a Roman house outside the west rampart of Procolitia (Carrawburgh) which had been excavated by Mr Clayton during the summer of this year. A turret recently found near Tower Tays, several inscribed stones lately discovered, and the foundations of the Roman bridge over the Tyne at Newcastle, were also referred to. These lectures were afterwards printed, and they form a very interesting supplement to the 3rd edition of 'The Roman Wall.'

At last in 1875 the 'Lapidarium Septentrionale' was finished. It formed a magnificent folio volume of 492 pages. It contained a description of all the monuments of Roman rule then known to exist in the North of England, and was artistically illustrated by carefully drawn woodcuts of the inscribed stones and sculptured figures. The woodcuts of

the inscribed stones were executed with scrupulous regard to any ambiguity in the lettering of the originals.

There was an appendix to the book drawing attention to some facts bearing upon the early history of the district which had been brought to light during the progress of the work, and to several inscriptions discovered too late to be inserted in their proper order. The appendix also contained drawings of the piers of the Tyne Bridge.

Three maps accompanied the volume: First, a large map of Northumberland showing the ancient camps and roads, made by direction of his Grace the Duke of Northumberland by Mr MacLauchlan. This formed the last contribution made by the fourth Duke of Northumberland to the elucidation of the early history of his county. It showed all or nearly all the objects of antiquarian interest within its bounds. Second, a skeleton map of the four northern counties, showing in red lines the course of the Roman Wall and the Roman roads. This map was supplied by the kindness of the Earl of Lonsdale, Lord-Lieutenant of the two western counties. Third, a map marking the localities from which the Cohorts which manned the Wall were drawn, showing how largely other, and some of them distant, provinces of the Roman empire were laid under contribution to hold in subjection the early inhabitants of northern England.

The preface to the book concludes with the following words:—

“Thus far, by the mercy of God, I have been spared and have been enabled to complete my task. In laying down my pen I cannot but express the hope that the ‘Lapidarium Septen-

trionale,' which has been the result of many anxious thoughts and much careful inquiry, will prove useful to subsequent inquirers."

The following congratulatory letter was received from the Secretary of the Society of Antiquaries of London :—

"BURLINGTON HOUSE, *June 2nd*, 1875.

"MY DEAR DR BRUCE,—At the last meeting of the Society I took occasion to call attention to the fact that the concluding part of the 'Lapidarium,' presented by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, was on the table.

"I was therefore instructed to convey to you, on behalf and in the name of the Society, the warmest congratulations on the completion of your great labours in compiling and editing that noble work, which has so largely contributed to throw fresh light on one of the most interesting periods in the history of this or any other country, the period of Roman occupation.—Believe me, yours very sincerely,

"C. KNIGHT WATSON,  
*Secretary.*"

Dr Bruce had two large copies of the book handsomely bound for presentation to the Duke of Northumberland and Mr Clayton.

(To his Wife.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, *4th October* 1875.

"On Saturday morning the big and splendid book arrived at Alnwick Castle before breakfast. After breakfast I presented it to his Grace: he evidently quite appreciated the value

of the gift, and admired it very much. He asked me to write his name in it, which I did.

"I have resolved to go to The Chesters this evening by the dinner train. I am anxious to present Mr Clayton's copy of 'The Lapidarium' to him personally. I have just finished writing the inscription in it.

"I am not going back at present to Alnwick Castle; I have brought away all the papers relating to the Museum, and I mean to look these over quietly at home before I do anything else."

The Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle decided to present Dr Bruce with a centrepiece and four silver lamps in acknowledgment of his labours in editing 'The Lapidarium Septentrionale'; and the Earl of Ravensworth, as President of the Society, wrote to Mr Clayton:—

"RAVENSWORTH CASTLE, GATESHEAD, *Jan.* 1877.

"DEAR MR CLAYTON,—I shall certainly do my best to attend the anniversary meeting of the Society of Antiquaries on the 5th February to assist at the ceremony of presentation of the Society's testimonial to Dr Bruce.

"In addressing the learned gentleman in the name of the Society, I wish I may be able to do justice to the sense of the Society's appreciation of his talents and researches.—Faithfully yours,

RAVENSWORTH.

"JOHN CLAYTON, Esq."

On the 5th of February 1877, at the annual meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, the presentation took place, and the following is in

substance an account of the proceedings in the 'Newcastle Daily Journal':—

"The Chairman (The Right Hon. Lord Ravensworth), addressing the Rev. Dr, said: Dr Collingwood Bruce, on this day, the sixty-fourth anniversary of the Society, it is my pleasing duty in the position of President to ask your acceptance of the piece of plate which is now displayed upon our table. You will receive it as a token of the high appreciation in which your labours are held by the Society which owes you so many obligations, and as a token of their appreciation of the industry, knowledge, classical training, as well as other acquirements, which you possess beyond any person probably in these northern counties. I need hardly refer to the works for which we are indebted to your labours—the history of the Roman Wall, and, more recently, the illustration, composition, and publication of that magnificent volume, in five parts, 'The Lapidarium Septentrionale.' I may say that hardly any region of the civilised world is unacquainted with the value of those labours, and with the existence of those interesting, curious, and highly valuable relics presented to the world mainly appertaining to the province of the North of England, and which have been elicited by your labours and industry. I may say of it—

'AUDUIT ET SI QUEM TELLUS EXTREMA REFUSO,  
SUBMOVET OCEANO, ET SI QUEM EXTENTA FLAGARUM,  
QUATUOR IN MEDIO DIRIMIT PLAGA SOLIS INIQUI.'"<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Æneid*, book vii., ll. 225-227.

This was the inscription on the centrepiece :—

“Presented by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to the Rev. JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, LL.D., F.S.A., in recognition of his arduous and successful labours in editing the ‘*Lapidarium Septentrionale*,’ A.D. 1876.”

Dr Bruce in reply said :—

“My Lord Ravensworth and Gentlemen, with great gratitude I accept at your hands the very valuable and beautiful gift which you have been kind enough to bestow upon me. I little thought that the efforts which I put forth in the compilation of the ‘*Lapidarium*’ would have met with so substantial a reward. With a full heart I thank you and the other subscribers to this handsome memorial for your great and unexpected kindness. The thought that I have so many and such indulgent friends will shed a ray of gladness over the brief remainder of my days. May all good attend you and them, my Lord, now and for ever.”

In the month of October 1876 there was found on the western side of the Roman station of Procolitia a Roman well, the inside measurement of which was 8 ft. 4 in. by 7 ft. 2 in.: the sides were formed by four strong stone walls. Inside the well were found a great mass of coins, twenty-four altars, sculptures, pottery, glass, bones, rings, fibulæ, dice, beads, sand, gravel, stones, wood, deers’ horns, iron implements, shoe-soles, and a due proportion of mud. There were fifteen altars bearing inscriptions, which with one exception were dedicated to the goddess Coventina,

a goddess previously unknown in Roman mythology. Mr Clayton was the owner of the estate on which the discovery was made, and it was by his orders and at his expense that the excavations were carried out which resulted in the finding of the treasures. The number of coins of all sorts which came into Mr Clayton's possession was 13,487, and it is supposed that nearly 3000 or 4000 coins were removed by persons who took possession of the well on the Sunday after the treasure had been discovered, and before it was thought necessary to guard the well.

Mr Clayton read a paper on the 2nd Dec. 1876 giving a description of the well and the remains found in it. On the 2nd of August 1877 he read a further paper, being a continuation of the description of and remarks on the Temple of Coventina and its contents.

In September of the same year Dr Bruce read a paper on Coventina's Fountain before the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club.

On the 4th of February 1878 a postscript by Mr Clayton on the same subject was presented to the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, and at the same time some observations were made by Dr Bruce respecting the coins found.

In the year 1886 it was determined to organise a second pilgrimage along the Roman Wall. The Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and the Cumberland and Westmorland Antiquarian Archæological Society joined in making the arrangements. In the programme Dr Bruce was described as chief pilgrim and expounder general, Mr Robert Blair, F.S.A., was the conductor in Northumberland, Mr R. S. Ferguson, F.S.A., the conductor in Cumberland.



On Saturday, 26th of June, a goodly party of pilgrims met at Wallsend, and there Dr Bruce addressed them and pointed out the traces of Segedunum, the Roman station there. After an examination of the station the bugle sounded for an advance, and the pilgrims started on their westward journey. Heading the procession were the President of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries (the Earl of Ravensworth) and Dr Bruce. The company included Professor Dr E. C. Clark of Cambridge, Dr Hodgkin, Dr Hulsebos of Utrecht, and many distinguished antiquaries. The party followed the traces of the Wall from Wallsend to Newcastle.

After an inspection of the Black Gate Museum and the collection of Roman inscribed and sculptured stones, many of which Dr Bruce described, the pilgrims adjourned to their well-earned dinner in the great hall of the Castle. During dinner a choir conducted by Mr C. Harrison, jun., sung a selection of glees and madrigals; Mr Mowatt played selections on the Northumberland pipes. The chairman, Lord Ravensworth, after giving the health of the Queen, gave as the next toast "The Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and the Cumberland and Westmorland Archæological Society." He said—

"It devolved upon him as President of the Newcastle Society to give to their friends from Cumberland a right royal welcome, and he would couple with them their guests who had done them the honour as strangers to dine at their humble board. It was thirty-seven years since a band of pilgrims assembled in Newcastle to visit the line of the Roman Wall. It was

*Dr and Mackinlay*  
*St. James*  
rather a remarkable circumstance that there were only two present among them that night who were present on that occasion—Dr Bruce and Mr Mackinlay. But there was one matter of peculiar congratulation, and it was his pleasure and duty to congratulate them upon having obtained, after a lapse of thirty-seven years, the same trusted pilot who conducted the pilgrimage in 1849.”

Dr Bruce, in responding, said :—

“The history of this great empire for nearly 400 years had to be dug out of the earth by the spade and pickaxe. Were it not for such societies as the one which assembled in the Castle of Newcastle from time to time, the valuable historical records inscribed by the men who made the history of those days would, to a large extent, be lost. They would learn, he was pretty sure, many valuable lessons in the course of their journey, and they would remember for many a long day their pilgrimage along the Roman Wall in the year 1886.”

On the following Monday the party proceeded on their course westward, halting at Chollerford for the night. An excellent account of their progress, and of the various interesting objects they inspected, is given in the second volume (N.S.) of the ‘Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle.’ On Wednesday, June 30, about 6 P.M., they arrived at the Poltross Burn—the boundary between Cumberland and Northumberland; and from that point the course of the Wall, the Vallum, the Roman roads, and the sites of the Roman camps were marked by flags

placed by the direction of the Cumberland Society. On Thursday morning a large contingent of the Cumberland and Westmorland Society arrived at Birdoswald and joined the party of pilgrims there, and on that night the pilgrims rested at Carlisle. On Friday they visited the Roman station at Castlesteads, and other places of interest in Carlisle and the neighbourhood. The Very Rev. the Dean of Carlisle presided at a dinner in the evening, and after the usual loyal toasts, proposed that of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle and the Cumberland and Westmorland Antiquarian Society, associating the names of Dr Bruce and Mr R. S. Ferguson with the toast. Dr Bruce in reply said:—

“There is much knowledge and much wisdom to be secured in knowing how our forefathers thought and acted. He was stirring up the experiences of the past in order to guide their footsteps for the future. There was another thing in connection with their societies—viz., that they had bright social gatherings. On this occasion when they had met together so pleasantly, they were all the better for their mutual association. They were not mere dryasdusts, but men who made brighter their own existence, enriched their own prospects, and enlarged their lives by means of these societies.”

On Saturday, July 3, the party arrived at Bowness. Dr Bruce explained that the western extremity of the Wall continued down the hill below the station, right into the water. Here he paused, and said “that their task, which had begun under such favourable auspices and had continued throughout in uninterrupted sun-

shine, was completed." Three hearty cheers were given for him, the same for Mr Blair and for Mr Ferguson, and the pilgrimage of 1886 came to an end.<sup>1</sup>

Prior to the pilgrimage Dr Bruce, in a letter to his son Gainsford, said he feared the pilgrimage would try him a good deal, as he could no longer walk as he once did ; but he would try.

But we read in the chronicle of the pilgrimage that

"the toil of each day, so far from having told upon the strength or enthusiasm of our venerable guide, philosopher, and friend, seemed to have added to his vigour. He climbed ladders, scaled walls, and delighted his followers at every turn with touches of quaint humour which, thrown into his discourse, kept his audience in constant good spirits."

An excursion along the Wall never failed to present fresh interest to Dr Bruce. He was an excellent cicerone, and was frequently requested to conduct visitors over parts of the Roman Barrier. When leisure permitted, he seldom failed to comply with these requests ; and he always succeeded in imparting some of his enthusiasm to those who accompanied him.

In the month of August 1864 Dr Bruce was invited to Chesters to meet Earl Stanhope, the President of the Society of Antiquaries of London. Mr Clayton organised an excursion along the Roman Wall. Dr Bruce had the pleasure of pointing out to Lord Stanhope some of the most interesting remains along the line of the Wall.

<sup>1</sup> After Dr Bruce's death, in the year 1896, a third pilgrimage took place under the auspices of the Cumberland Society, and passed off with great success.

Earl Stanhope, in writing to Dr Bruce from Chevening on 29th October 1864, says:—

“We returned from our Northern tour about a fortnight or three weeks ago. It was very prosperous and pleasant in all its parts; but there is none to which our thoughts recur with more gratification than to our rambles in your company along the Roman Wall.”

In August 1869 Dr Bruce was invited by Sir Hedworth Williamson, Bart., to meet at Whitburn Dr Stanley, Dean of Westminster, and Lady Augusta Stanley. On Monday, 16th, the Dean, Lady Augusta, Mr Victor Williamson, and Dr Bruce paid a visit to Hexham Church. The incumbent, the Rev. H. C. Barker, the churchwardens, and Mr Joseph Fairless were in attendance to receive them. They carefully inspected the interior of the beautiful edifice, minutely examined the cloisters, and descended into the crypt. They then left for Chesters, where they enjoyed the hospitality of Mr John Clayton, and on the following day an excursion was made to Borcovicus. The Dean took the keenest interest in the Roman remains, and entered into the full enjoyment of the expedition. This characteristic letter from the Dean shows how highly he appreciated the expedition along the Roman Wall.

(Letter from Dean Stanley to the Hon. Louisa Stanley.<sup>1</sup>)

“CHESTERS, *August 17th, 1869.*

“MY DEAR LOUISA,—You have heard that we determined to vary our northward journey by

<sup>1</sup> ‘Dean Stanley’s Letters and Verses, 1829-1881,’ by R. E. Proctor.

exploring Durham and Northumberland, which we did under the guidance of young Victor Williamson, brother of Sir Hedworth Williamson, at whose house (Whitburn) we stayed, or rather slept, for four nights, making long expeditions each day to the haunts of the Venerable Bede, and the curious, though not very venerable, Cuthbert.

"These, however interesting, I omit, and pass on to our fourth day, when we rose early and journeyed by Newcastle and Hexham under the charge of Dr Bruce, (Presbyterian) clergyman of Newcastle, who in 1848 had meditated a journey to Rome. The Revolution of that troubled year interrupted him, and he accordingly determined to make acquaintance with Rome nearer home. He turned to the Roman Wall, which from that time he has taken under his special care, and which is more to him than Canterbury Cathedral or Westminster Abbey have been to me. In 1849 he took a pilgrimage of twenty-five friends along the whole route, guiding them with a staff cut from the oaken piles of the old Roman Bridge at Newcastle, walking from point to point, and at times assisted by a long waggon drawn by two horses called Romulus and Remus. As they advanced their numbers swelled to two hundred, and they spent a good week in passing from sea to sea.

"This charming old likeness of Monkbarns only needed Sir Arthur Wardour to make up the companion, and him we found in our host at Chesters—Mr Clayton, an ancient Northumbrian who, by industrious and frugal living, had

amassed, they say, a fortune equal to that of the Duke of Northumberland, and whose only luxury is the Roman Wall, which he has taken under his special protection, living, as the name of his abode 'Chesters' explains, in a Roman camp or fortress on the Wall which they identify with Cilurnum. These two old antiquaries, differing from their prototypes only by never quarrelling, undertook to be our guides. There was, however, a third member of the party who must not be overlooked—Miss Clayton, the sister. She was attired in a sort of man's jacket, drawn over her robe, and we had not been in the house ten minutes before she produced her coins, with which she was as conversant as if she had lived in the court of Hadrian or Severus.

"The first day, of course, of our arrival was devoted to the remains of Cilurnum immediately round the house, where we were shown the traces of the different epochs in fortress, wall, and bridge, and finally led, as by 'the interpreter,' not to the 'House Beautiful,' but to what they call 'Antiquity House,' piled with statues and inscriptions from the neighbourhood. One of these, as the 'Spectator' would say, 'pleased me very much.' It was an altar, dedicated by some soldier, tired, doubtless, and vexed by the constant changes of religion, 'Divis veteribus' ('To the Old Gods'), as if determined that they should not be forgotten in the medley of new beliefs. Another was by a soldier of a very comprehensive turn of mind, 'To Jupiter, and to all the rest of the Immortal Gods'; and then remembering that he had forgotten some one,

'To the Genius of the Camp.' The party in the evening consisted of the family, including a nephew, heir of the place, corresponding to 'Hector of the Phoca.'

"The next morning we were commanded by the stern Claytona to breakfast punctually at 8.30 A.M., and at 10 A.M. we three (Victor Williamson and our two selves), with the two antiquaries, started along 'The Military,' as General Wade's road is called, to the fortress of Borcovicus. Most poetic and interesting was the sight of the Wall, holding its straight course over hill and dale, availing itself of rock, morass, and height wherever it could, but always with its earthenwork towards England and its foss towards Scotland; and at every mile its guard-house and at every six miles its station, and every station inhabited by the same legion from century to century—Spaniards from the Asturias in one, Dutch in another, Belgians in another. What a romance of ancient days might be woven from the tidings of the distant world they had left floating up to them in their remote fortresses, disturbed at times by the naked savages from north or south breaking in upon the thin line of civilised life which runs between.

"Then we explored every hole and corner of Borcovicus, including the trough, which is close by one of the gates. Antony Place, an old labourer of eighty-one who has long lived on the spot, on being asked his opinion on the use of the trough, expressed his belief that it was where 'the Romans washed their Scottish prisoners.' We returned to dine at 7 P.M., and were again



regaled with coins and legends of the ancient time, and started away the next morning full of agreeable recollections, and indulging the hope that, in the rise and fall of Northumbrian nobles, our host and his nephew and his nephew's son might become the Duke of Cilurnum, Marquis of Borcovicus, and Earl of Vindolana.—Ever yours affectionately,  
A. P. STANLEY."

In September 1870 the Social Science Congress met at Newcastle, the Duke of Northumberland being President. Dr Bruce took a party of the visitors over the Castle of Newcastle on the evening of Friday the 23rd, and explained the various features of that ancient structure. An excursion to the Roman Wall was arranged for Saturday the 24th, and on that day a party of 250 ladies and gentlemen went by train from Newcastle to Bardon Mill Railway Station. They proceeded on foot to the Roman station at Chesterholme (Vindolana), from which they walked by Hot Bank to the Roman station of Housesteads (Borcovicus), then back over the hill of Barcombe to Bardon Mill. The whole distance traversed on foot was about eight or nine miles; the weather was beautiful, the scenery inviting, and Dr Bruce, who acted as the leader of the party, sustained the interest of all, and no one thought of fatigue. Mr Clayton, the owner of Borcovicus, provided a sumptuous luncheon in a large tent erected in the station of Borcovicus, and the day was one of full enjoyment to all who joined in the excursion. The following is an extract from a newspaper paragraph relating to the excursion :—

"Who would think of inviting a mixed party of 250 gentlemen and ladies to a nine miles walk ?

Yet as many as that footed it, we are told. Where could one look for a man capable of walking nine miles and lecturing all the way? Dr Bruce, a learned local antiquarian, was that man."

The visitors were so pleased with the attention shown them by Dr Bruce that they joined in presenting to him an address of thanks from which the following are extracts:—

"To THE

REVEREND JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, LL.D., F.S.A.

"WE, the undersigned members and associates of the Social Science Congress meeting at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, A.D. 1870, desire to place upon record that under your able guidance we had great enjoyment in—

"1. An inspection of the ancient Castle of Newcastle on the evening of the 23rd September.

"2. An excursion to celebrated stations of the Roman Wall and the Lake District in North-umberland on the following day.

"That a debt of gratitude is due from us for your extreme courtesy, attention, and kindness is undeniable, while for the store of invaluable information, instruction, and amusement you inexhaustibly unfolded to us we are utterly unable to express our acknowledgments.

"Two hours spent at the castle appeared to pass in about a quarter of that time, and secured many pilgrims for 'the Wall.'

"The unusual fineness of the weather, the novelty of the excursion, the striking character of the North-umbrian hills and valleys, their extensive prospects, and the interest thrown over them by your references

to bygone times, together with the kindness of the reception and extreme hospitality displayed by the possessor of much of the extensive tract of country passed over, all combined to render the day one of entire pleasure and satisfaction.

"Much of this would have been wanting but for the *genius loci*, the historian of 'the Wall,' and we accordingly must always consider ourselves to have been most highly favoured by being under his inspiring influence.

"That you may long live to enjoy the fruits of your researches and literary pursuits in health and happiness, and tendering to you, each and all of us, our most grateful thanks,

"We are, Reverend Sir,

"Yours sincerely and obliged."

(Here follow 87 signatures.)

In September 1886 Dr Bruce met Archbishop Benson at Alnwick Castle. On the 13th Dr Benson and his son came to breakfast with him at his house in Newcastle. The Archbishop was a keen antiquary and a finished scholar, and he greatly enjoyed a visit to the Museum of Roman Antiquities in the castle under the guidance of Dr Bruce, and took great pleasure in deciphering the inscribed stones. He and Dr Bruce paid a visit to Mr Clayton at The Chesters and spent a day on the Wall.

On the 15th September Dr Bruce attained his eighty-second year, and he received the following letter from the Archbishop:—

"BAMBOROUGH CASTLE, 15th Sep. 1886.

"MY DEAR DR BRUCE,—I will not let this anniversary day pass over without wishing you all

happiest and best wishes for this world and for ever upon your eighty-second birthday.

"I hope the concluding day of the last VIXIT ANNOS which a whole number would record could have been by any means as delightful to you as it was to us, through the guidance and knowledge and illustration with which you so richly entertained us.

"I think you have given me the most vivid series of photographs with elucidations which I have ever enjoyed since Emil Braun led me through his Forum. And these were the monuments of dying things, while yesterday and the day before were the swathing-bands and corals of nascent England—destined giant.

"God's great providences have a new page for me.

"Do accept our most hearty felicitations and our thankfulness for so much kindness together.

"It would be taking a great liberty to hope you were not tired, for you gave no symptoms of it.

"With my son Frederic's respects and mine, in hopes of our happy meeting at Alnwick.—Sincerely always yours,

"EDW. CANTUAR.

"The Wall is a new factor already to my boy's enlarging ideas of scholarship."

Mr John Bruce, F.S.A., who had edited the Calendars of Domestic State Papers, and who was well known in London as a distinguished antiquary, died in 1869. In the North of England some persons thought when they read the announcement of his death in the news-

papers it referred to Dr John Collingwood Bruce, and the following letter was written by Mr Howard of Corby Castle to Mr John Clayton :—

*"23rd Dec. 1869.*

"DEAR MR CLAYTON,—Do not you think that some public effort should be made to cherish and perpetuate the memory of Dr Bruce by some memorial, some column at the terminus of the Roman Wall or other appropriate spot, or other fitting monument?

"It is true some may say that the learned and standard work on the Roman Wall which claims the name of John Collingwood Bruce as its author is itself a sufficient tribute to his attainments, and will carry his name to posterity, but some popular tribute to the memory of our deceased friend seems to be due and called for. Many who are not scholars or deeply read value the exertions of Dr Bruce in staying the hand of destruction in directing public opinion to the importance of preserving to the Border counties what remains of that wonderful undertaking. But I need not do more than venture to suggest; you have yourself done so much in the way of illustrating and preserving the remains of the Roman Wall, that I think the project will meet your sympathy. Being abroad, I could not unfortunately attend a meeting, but the idea if attainable is safe in your hands, and with many good wishes of the season,—I remain, yours ever sincerely,

"PHILIP H. HOWARD.

"HOTEL DE L'ARNO, FLORENCE."

M

Mr Clayton sent this letter on to Dr Bruce with this note :—

“ Dec. 1869.

NEWCASTLE, *Tuesday Evening.*

“MY DEAR DR BRUCE,—Lord Brougham, in order to ascertain what the world thought of him, countenanced the circulation of a report of his own death. Mr John Bruce, the antiquary, of London, has by dying done for you what Lord Brougham without going through that process did for himself. I enclose a letter which I have this day received from our excellent friend, Mr Howard of Corby, on this occasion.—I am, always yours sincerely,

“JOHN CLAYTON.”

## CHAPTER IX.

THE QUESTION "WHO BUILT THE WALL?"—VIEWS OF STUKELEY,  
HODGSON, AND BRUCE—PAMPHLET BY MR BELL OF IRTHING-  
TON—J. C. BRUCE'S ANSWER—PAMPHLET BY "A CUMBRIAN"  
—ARTICLES IN 'ARCHÆOLOGICAL REVIEW' BY MR J. R. BOYLE.

THE question "Who built the Wall?" has given rise to much diversity of opinion. At one time there was a tradition generally accepted that part of the Vallum had been made by Agricola, the rest of it by Hadrian, and the stone wall with its fortresses, towers, and military way, by Severus.

Stukeley, the antiquary, who flourished in the early part of the eighteenth century, expressed the opinion that the true intent both of the Vallum and the Wall was in effect to make a camp extending across the kingdom, which consequently was fortified both ways, north and south. In his judgment both works were made at the same time and by the same person.

The Rev. John Hodgson, the historian of Northumberland, had slowly come to the conclusion, after a careful examination of the whole line of the Wall, that the Vallum and the Wall, with the castles and towers of the Wall, were one great military work planned by one master-mind, and that the whole was the work of Hadrian.

Dr Bruce came to the same conclusion as Hodgson,

and expressed his view and supported it by cogent reasons in the lectures delivered before the Literary and Philosophical Society, and in the lecture given by him at Chester.

In January 1851 the first edition of the 'Roman Wall' was published, and one of the chapters in that book, to which we have already referred, discusses the question, "Who built the Wall?" and sets forth reasons for ascribing it to Hadrian.

In the preface to the second edition of the 'Roman Wall,' published in November 1852, Dr Bruce states that he had again carefully examined the whole of the great military structure, with the result that he was thoroughly convinced of the correctness of the view maintained in the former edition that the lines of the Barrier are the scheme of one great military engineer.

In the third edition of the 'Roman Wall,' published in January 1867, Dr Bruce dealt with the same question, and contended that the weight of evidence greatly preponderated in favour of Hadrian. From this view he never wavered, and was always ready to support by facts and arguments the claim of Hadrian as the designer and builder of the Murus and Vallum and the fortifications connected with them. There were, however, some zealous antiquaries who were unwilling to abandon the old tradition that the Stone Wall was the work of Severus; and a discussion of the question gave rise to a war of papers and pamphlets which must be noted here because they attracted some attention at the time, and tend to show that the opinion which the public formed in favour of the claims of Hadrian was not arrived at without much debate and ample consideration.



In July 1852 Mr Bell, of the Nook, Irthington, published a pamphlet entitled "The Roman Wall, an attempt to substantiate the claims of Severus to the authorship of the Roman Wall." On the 4th of the following month, at the monthly meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, Dr Bruce read a paper entitled "Hadrian, the builder of the Roman Wall," in reply to Mr Bell's pamphlet.

In December of the same year Dr Bruce published his paper in the form of a tract. In the preface the following passage occurs :—

"Truth generally results from discussion. In consequence of Mr Bell's statements, I have been induced to investigate some points which I had taken for granted, and have in some particulars modified my views. The result has, however, in every case been to render me more confident than before that Hadrian, not Severus, built our Roman Wall."

In 1857 there appeared a bulky pamphlet entitled "Mural Controversy, the question *Who built the Roman Wall?* illustrated by a Cumbrian." This anonymous pamphlet, although it displayed considerable ingenuity and ability, was written in a rude, captious style, wholly unfit for the discussion of a question of historical interest. In the same year there was printed by Dr Bruce a pamphlet entitled "When and by whom was the Roman Wall built?" a chapter in continuation of Hodgson's 'History of Northumberland,' Chapter II.<sup>1</sup> This chapter contains a full and elaborate examination of the authorities

<sup>1</sup> The first chapter in the continuation of the 'History of Northumberland' had been undertaken by Mr Hodgson Hinde.

bearing upon the history of the Roman occupation of Britain, and a statement of the various facts which bear upon the question "Who built the Wall?"

On the 2nd February in the same year, at a meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, Dr Bruce read the first part of a paper in reply to the pamphlet of "A Cumbrian," and on Wednesday, 4th March, at a meeting of the same Society, he read the concluding part of his reply.

In this paper he dealt fully with the arguments and statements made by "A Cumbrian." In returning thanks to Dr Bruce for his paper, the chairman, Mr Hodgson Hinde, remarked that the subject would have been more interesting to them if they had not all been of one mind on the question. "A Cumbrian" published a reply to this paper by Dr Bruce, and re-issued what he called a second edition of his pamphlet. The second edition consisted of a re-issue of the first with a new title-page and an appendix, together with cancels of pp. 3, 25, and 63. The appendix contained no new matter which Dr Bruce thought it worth while to notice.

There appeared in the 'Archæological Review' in September and October 1889, two articles by Mr J. R. Boyle entitled "The Roman Wall, a re-consideration of its problems."<sup>1</sup> These articles were in substance the same as the pamphlet by "A Cumbrian," put into a better form and without the personalities in which the former publication abounded.

Dr Bruce did not take any notice of Mr Boyle's articles, although he considered they contained a number of erroneous statements. He was satisfied that all the material facts bearing upon the contro-

<sup>1</sup> Vol. iv. pp. 81, 153.

versy were before the public, and that no advantage could be gained by a re-statement of the evidence or a repetition of the arguments.

It is not proposed here to revive the controversy, or to attempt a statement of the facts and arguments bearing upon the question "Who built the Wall?" Some facts, however, which have become known since the death of Dr Bruce, and which tend to confirm the opinions he held, may be mentioned.

Of late years excavations have been made on the Roman Wall under the direction of Mr F. Haverfield, M.A., F.S.A. These excavations have established that the ditch and mounds of the Vallum were all made at one time, and that no trace can be found of a paved Roman road forming any part of it. It is needless to state that it is impossible to conceive that had the Vallum been an independent work, a paved Roman road would not have been carried along it. Further, the excavations have established in the opinion of Mr Haverfield that the Vallum, the Stone Wall, forts, and mile-castles were all constructed at one time. The paved military road which follows the Wall, running between it and the Vallum, has been detected by the excavations of Mr Haverfield in a sufficient number of places to establish beyond doubt that it extended along the whole line of fortifications. Mr Haverfield suggests that the Vallum was not a military work, but represented a line of civil or legal delimitation. It is contended that this last theory presents many difficulties, but this is not the place to discuss the question.

It is not unimportant to note that Mommsen, the German historian, in his work 'The Provinces of the Roman Empire,' adopts the same view as Dr Bruce.

After describing the line of the Wall and Vallum, he says—

“It is, strictly taken, a military road protected on both sides by fortifications leading from sea to sea for a length of about seventy miles. The defence on the north is formed by a huge wall originally 16 ft. high and 8 ft. thick. Towards the south the road is protected by two parallel earthen ramparts. Between the Stone Wall and the earthen ramparts, on the road itself, lie the camp-stations and watch-houses. This structure of grand solidity, which must have required as garrison 10,000 to 12,000 men, formed thenceforth the basis of military operations in the north of England. It was not a frontier wall in the proper sense; on the contrary, not merely did the posts that had already from Agricola's time been pushed forward far beyond it continue to subsist by its side, but subsequently the line, about a half shorter from the Firth of Forth to the Firth of Clyde, already occupied by Agricola with a chain of posts, was fortified in a similar but weaker way, first under Pius, then in a more comprehensive manner under Severus, as it were, as an advanced post for Hadrian's Wall.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See Professor Dickson's translation, vol. i., book 8, chap. 5, pp. 186, 187.

## CHAPTER X.

1853, DEGREE OF LL.D. CONFERRED—RE-UNION OF OLD PUPILS—CHOLERA IN NEWCASTLE—JOURNEY TO ROME, DIFFICULTIES ENCOUNTERED—JOURNEY TO BAYEUX—LECTURES ON BAYEUX TAPESTRY—PUBLICATION OF BOOK ON BAYEUX TAPESTRY—1855, THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES RESOLVE, AT THE SUGGESTION OF THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND, TO COLLECT THE ANCIENT MELODIES OF NORTHUMBERLAND—COMMITTEE REPORT TO THE DUKE—1858, COMMITTEE RESOLVE TO PREPARE AIRS FOR PRINTING—1876, DR BRUCE LECTURES ON THE PIPES AND PIPE MUSIC OF NORTHUMBERLAND AT NEWCASTLE AND AT ALNWICK—1877, PIPE COMPETITION AT NEWCASTLE—1878, SECOND LECTURE ON PIPES AND PIPE MUSIC AT NEWCASTLE—1879, THIRD LECTURE AT NEWCASTLE—1882, A COLLECTION OF BALLADS, MELODIES, AND SMALL-PIPE TUNES OF NORTHUMBRIA PUBLISHED—1885, LECTURE AT THE INTERNATIONAL INVENTIONS EXHIBITION BY DR BRUCE ON THE NORTHUMBERLAND SMALL-PIPES.

IN recognition of Dr Bruce's literary labours the Senate of his alma mater, the University of Glasgow, conferred upon him in April 1853 the Degree of Doctor of Laws.

The resolution of the Senate was made known to him by the following letter from Professor Sir William Thomson (now Lord Kelvin):—

“GLASGOW, *April 4, 1853.*

“MY DEAR SIR,—I have much pleasure in informing you that the Senate of the University has this day resolved that the degree of LL.D. be conferred upon you.

"The motion, which was made by myself, was seconded by the Principal, and was unanimously agreed to, with strong expressions of approval on the parts of Professors Maconochie and Lushington, and several other members of Senate.—I remain, dear sir, yours very truly,

"WILLIAM THOMSON.

"The Rev. J. COLLINGWOOD BRUCE."

In the same year he was elected a corresponding member of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, of the Imperial Society of Antiquaries of France, and of the Society of Antiquaries of Normandy; and in the year 1866 he was elected corresponding member of the Archæological Institute of Rome.

To celebrate the distinction conferred upon him by his university, Dr Bruce held a re-union of the old pupils on the 6th of May 1853, and invited all those whose addresses were known, nearly 400 of whom attended. Many who had not met for years rejoiced to renew their old friendship, and pleasant memories of schoolboy days were recalled with delight.

In the autumn of 1853 a severe epidemic of cholera broke out in Newcastle. At the height of the visitation there were more than 100 deaths a-day in the town, and more than 1700 persons were carried off by the pestilence. The town presented a most depressing appearance. The weather was dark and overcast, and the air was filled with clouds of small flies. Funerals took possession of the streets, every other person was in mourning for some lost friend, and the newly-made graves in the churchyards were rendered conspicuous by being covered with quicklime. The

medical practitioners of the town were worn out by constant attendance on the sick and dying. The people were panic-stricken. In such circumstances it was no light responsibility to have charge of a household, including ushers, pupils, and servants, close upon fifty persons, but it was thought best not to dismiss the school and thus add to the panic. Every attention was paid in the management of the household to the laws of health, and during this anxious time Mr Thomas Annandale, Dr Bruce's medical attendant, regularly paid a visit to the school every morning and saw that it had a clean bill of health. Fortunately no member of the household was attacked. One boy who was called home by his parents, and left the school apparently in perfect health, died from cholera within a week of his arrival at home.

In December 1853 Dr Bruce set out on his long-wished-for visit to Rome. The journey proved to be dilatory, difficult, and disagreeable—a strange contrast to the speed and comfort of the present day. He kept a faithful record of the incidents of the journey, and as it is not uninteresting to mark how within recent years the facilities for travelling have increased, it will not be inopportune to give some extracts from his diary.

“I arrived at King's Cross at 4 A.M. on the 10th December 1853 and took train for Dover, leaving London Bridge at 8 A.M. On arrival at Dover the tide was too far down to allow of our embarking in the harbour, and the sea too rough to admit of the steamer lying along the pier. So there was nothing for us but to embark in small

boats. A pretty toss we had, and right glad we were when we found ourselves safely chucked on board. The wind blew from the east; the weather was bitterly cold. On arrival off Calais we were informed by a signal that the tide was too low to admit of our entering the harbour. The anchor was cast, and the vessel allowed to roll for three long hours.

"The express train, which should have carried us from Calais to Paris, had taken its departure some hours before. At 6.30 P.M. I was on my way to Paris. Twelve hours were spent on this part of the journey, though, on my setting off from London, I expected to have completed the whole route in that time.

"At 5.30 P.M. I sat down to *table d'hôte* with about sixty others at Meurice's."

He happened to sit next to Mr Oswald, the African traveller, a friend and companion of Dr Livingstone. They had a very interesting conversation about the missions in South Africa.

"The railroad journey from Paris to Châlons was performed at night. The steamer was advertised to leave Châlons for Lyons at 4 A.M., but it was 6 before we started. As we approached Lyons we ascertained that the Rhone was not navigable between Lyons and Avignon in consequence of the dryness of the season. It was not until my passage through Lyons on my return home that I examined its antiquities and visited the cells in which Ponticus and Blandina were confined.



"The afternoon which I spent in Lyons was chiefly occupied in devising plans for getting forward on my journey, and in inquiring after diligences and private conveyances. At the hotel I met a gentleman who was a Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford, and who was bent on the same errand as myself—a visit to Rome. Having in many points a similarity of view we resolved to cling together. Next morning, December 13th, after a hasty breakfast, I went to the diligence office at least an hour too soon. When the diligence arrived, there was one place in the banquette and another in the rotunde which I and my friend gladly accepted. We agreed to occupy them alternately.

"Right glad was I to be once more on my way to Italy, though I sadly grieved at the thought of spending twenty-four hours on the journey, which, if performed on the Rhone, would only occupy twelve. No provision was made for refreshments until we reached Valence.

"We were to reach Avignon at 8 A.M. Ten o'clock came, but no Avignon, but we stopped at a small inn for *déjeuner*. It was not until 2 o'clock in the afternoon that we reached Avignon. I was particularly wishful to see Avignon, but the police regulations obliged me to press on without loss of time.

"The railway has been open for some time between Avignon and Marseilles, and by it we of course proceeded. At 8 P.M. we found ourselves in the station at Marseilles, and we sought an inn as near the quay as possible. Our great object being to get forward on the following day,

we at once secured the services of a commissioner, and gave up our passports to be viséd. Next morning I found the steamer could not proceed to sea that day. This was a severe disappointment; it was a day subtracted from a sight of Rome's wonders. My passport being properly viséd, I was able to secure a place on the Vectis, one of the two fastest steamships on the Mediterranean.

"Shortly after four o'clock on the afternoon of Friday the 16th I found myself afloat in the Mediterranean. The evening was beautiful; the last rays of the sun tinged the tops of the rocky hills which embay Marseilles with a fringe of gold. Venus shone forth with peculiar lustre. Shortly after sunset the sky assumed a purple hue. After a while the moon arose. We kept pretty near the coast, and before I went below for a night's rest we had rounded the promontory which forms the western boundary of the bay of Genoa. At a quarter to eleven o'clock A.M. on the 17th of December we cast anchor in the bay of Genoa. Fully an hour elapsed before we were allowed to land. Genoa may be said to be a city of palaces, and well deserves the epithet *superba*. I took a hasty run through several of the palaces.

"At eight P.M. we again made for our vessel, and had but just gained it when it put out to sea. The wind blew rather hard during the night, and by the time we neared Leghorn the sea was, in a landsman - estimate, running high. Our vessel could not get into the harbour, but in approaching as nearly as possible for the con-

venience of our landing, it came too near some rocks which bar the entrance. Unhappily the anchor dragged, and we experienced a very uncomfortable sensation on feeling the vessel strike upon the rocks as it was lifted up and let down again by the heaving of the sea. It struck some twenty times before it could be got out of its position of danger. It was about two P.M. before we got permission to land.<sup>1</sup>

"Anxious to reach Rome before Christmas Day, I engaged a place from Leghorn for Civita Vecchia in the French mail steamer *Bosphore*, which was advertised to sail on Thursday, December 22nd. It was detained by bad weather on its passage from Marseilles, and did not take its departure from Leghorn until the Friday. The voyage of that night was a pleasant one. At daylight we dropped anchor in the Port of Civita Vecchia, but it was half-past nine A.M. before we were permitted to land. Two hours were spent in getting away from Civita Vecchia. Breakfast was to be had if possible in the comfortable inn of the place, our passports were to be sought for and viséd, places in the diligence were to be secured, and our luggage was to be examined at the papal custom-house. My brother and I at length found ourselves seated on the top of the diligence unprotected by any covering from the weather. We had taken the precaution to provide ourselves with a flask of wine and a loaf of bread, fearing that the journey to Rome might be a protracted one. Little did we think that

<sup>1</sup> Here Dr Bruce met his brother Thomas, who for some years had resided in Leghorn.

it was to be so protracted and so disagreeable as it proved. There were five diligences all full. They were under the charge of one conductor. We had no sooner got in motion than our patience was tried by a long halt. At the gate of the town we were stopped to see that we were all authorised to proceed and to have our passports examined. It was mid-day before we were again fairly away, upwards of five hours having elapsed since we reached the port. Towards the decline of the day I noticed in the road we were upon the unmistakable features of an ancient Roman way. It was straight as an arrow, there were traces of ramparts on each side of it, and I could distinguish the ancient stones from the modern metal by their being laid precisely as the stones are in the military way accompanying our Roman Wall. It was the Aurelian Way.

“As the light was leaving us, signs of a storm were evident. The lightning flashed in the distance. On the top of the diligence my brother and I were exposed to the pitiless pelting of the storm from about five in the evening until about midnight. About seven o'clock at night, when the darkness was intense, the pole of one of the diligences broke in descending a hill. The whole cavalcade was brought up, and we were kept standing in the most deplorable plight for about an hour whilst a new pole was sent for and adjusted. I was not much surprised at this accident; my chief surprise was that it was the only one. The condition of the horses, the raggedness of the rope to which they were har-

nessed, and the haphazard way in which the drivers descended the numerous hills which beset our course, exceeds belief. On going up a hill horses and driver seemed to hold a council at each step whether they would not stop work altogether.

“Hour after hour passed away, but no Rome. We used our bread and wine very economically or we should have been badly off, for we had no opportunity of getting anything by the way. As the church clocks were chiming a quarter to eleven we pulled up at the Cavalleggeri Gate of Rome. Here we stood in torrents of rain for three-quarters of an hour while our passports were being examined. Our luggage had now to be examined, and here we were detained in darkness and storm for nearly another hour. At length we moved on. We crossed the Tiber by the way most attractive to an inhabitant of Newcastle, by the Ælian Bridge. At length we arrived at the Diligence Office. Here all poetry was at an end. There were no cabs to be had. Monsieur le Conducteur began to call out our names *seriatim* and give us our bills of permission to rest temporarily in Rome. In spite of the confusion which followed we succeeded at length in getting our permit and laying hold of our luggage and also hunting up a porter. We trudged through the narrow streets of Rome and arrived at the Hotel Europe, where we found rooms reserved for us; refreshments were placed before us, and we soon retired to bed. Our slumbers that night were too sound to be disturbed by the delicious thought

that we had really arrived at the City of the Cæsars."

Dr Bruce occupied himself diligently in examining the antiquities of Rome, and attended St Peter's at the great ceremony on Christmas eve and at High Mass on Christmas morning. On both occasions the Pope was present. He also attended the splendid ceremonial in the Sistine Chapel, and visited the Capitol, the Coliseum, the Forum, the Arches of Titus, Severus, and Constantine. He gave special attention to the Column of Trajan, and visited with great interest the Catacombs, the Mamertine Prison, and the sculptures in the gallery of the Vatican. His diary contains a very full account of all these and many other objects of interest. The Duke and Duchess of Northumberland were staying in Rome at the time. They asked Dr Bruce to their hotel to meet a few friends one evening, and introduced him to some distinguished Italian antiquaries, some of whom were of great service and enabled him to view many of the objects of antiquity under the most favourable circumstances.

Dr Bruce had intended to leave Rome for Naples on Thursday the 29th December, in order to visit Herculaneum and Pompeii, but the Neapolitan Consul refused to sign his passport. The Consul reckoned the ten days' quarantine from the day Dr Bruce landed at Civita Vecchia, not from the time he reached Italy.

In consequence of this delay he with much regret relinquished his intended journey to Naples, having to return home in time for the re-opening of the school. He went instead from Rome

to Siena and Florence. The following letter gives an amusing account of the journey from Rome to Siena :—

(To his Son, Gainsford.)

“LEGHORN, *Friday, Jan. 8th, 1854.*

“I have been storm-staid for three days; how and when I shall be able to proceed upon my journey I cannot say. Seven steamers were due here yesterday, but not one has made its appearance.

“I will give you an account of my journey from Rome to Siena, where we got a railway to Florence. The diligence was to start at six, and as no cabs can be had in Rome at that early hour, we had rather a long walk through its dimly lighted streets.

“In the compartment of the coach which we occupied there was for the greater part of the way only one other passenger. In England I would have taken him for a pork butcher or a cattle jobber. There was, however, a twinkle about his eye which made us suspect that he was a man of a different order. For the first part of the journey he laid himself at full length on the seat and seemed to indulge in sleep. The first twenty-five miles of our journey we accomplished in four hours. At Viterbo we stopped for dinner. Arrived at the inn hungry and cold (it was now five o'clock, and twelve hours had elapsed since we had breakfasted), we found no fire in the large dining-room and but small preparations for our repast. At last some sticks were kindled, and in the course of time a dish of very thin soup was carried along the intricate

passages which separated us from the kitchen. A few other small things were afterwards introduced, and we did our best to make a meal, knowing that further on we should fare still worse. Before rejoining the diligence Thomas learnt from Monsieur le Conducteur that our companion was a judge of one of the highest (if not the highest) courts of law at Rome.

"After dark travelling became more difficult, for the roads which had been partially thawed in the day had again frozen. For one stage we had ten horses. Always before coming to a hill the coach stopped for some minutes to give the horses a rest. On one occasion we were nearly beat. The shouts of the guard and three postillions, and the lashing and cracking of their whips, had three times failed to stimulate the horses sufficiently to set the coach in motion. It was not until I suggested it that the guard asked the passengers to alight. When asked all did alight except Monsignor, and the summit of the hill was soon gained. Going down the hills was a difficult matter. The harness used is all rope, and the horses have not the power of holding back the coach. The drag chain held very badly, and the coach had a tendency to run over the horses as well as, for want of guidance, to swerve from its straight course. By means of ropes attached to the hinder part of the coach it was held back, and with difficulty prevented falling over. About 10 o'clock Monsignor was asleep when the guard came to ask us to descend. Catching the word *pericolo*, he thought the robbers were upon us, and though to relieve the panting horses he



would not stir, bounced out of the coach with great vigour, nearly knocking Thomas and me over. About midnight the guard determined to wait for daylight before proceeding further. We knocked up the people of an inn (if such it can be called) at Aquapendente and asked for lodgings. We had a very rueful aspect as we stood in the dirty kitchen by the dying embers on the hearth, wondering what the fat yawning woman with a little oil lamp in her hand would do with us all. Supper or anything to eat was out of the question. Thomas and I got a bed warm with some previous sleeper. No breakfast was spread before us next morning. At a dirty café next door we got a small cup of coffee, but no bread or milk. Then returning to the comfortless kitchen of the inn we looked at some strings of dried sausages which were hanging up. Some of the passengers induced the old woman to fry some; they were too hideous looking and savoured too strongly of garlic for me to touch. At last a sight of some hens in the yard suggested the idea of eggs, and we had four put into a pan just as we were told the coach was moving: I ate my two in the street without bread, and without salt or spoon. Proceeding on our way, I felt thankful that we had not gone further in the darkness. To say nothing of banditti, we should have run great risk of being thrown over a precipice. The next two or three stages we walked about half the ground, but the scenery was very grand. During an ascent of about five miles we had two oxen to aid our seven horses. At Radicofani we halted to have a chance of fishing for a dinner. Monsignor went

into the parlour; I and the common folks went into the kitchen. Fortunately there was some cooking going forward, and three most interesting looking tiny chickens (I could have eaten all three) were toasting over the embers. It being a fast day, I was asked whether I would have my soup grasso or magro, and replied grasso, of course. Tom said I was wrong, for he had seen Monsignor at work with the magro, and he was sure it would be the best. He was right; I had a ladle full of the magro, which was very nice.

“Though we rose from dinner with an appetite we yet rose refreshed and thankful. The night again set in cold, and the roads were like glass. Men were hired to hold the coach back in going down the worst hills. The only accident that we met with was the breakage of the pole, which of course caused some delay. We had, however, many narrow escapes. At three o'clock of the morning of the first day of the year we reached Siena. Before we could leave the diligence office the proper authorities had to be knocked up and our baggage and passports examined. This cost us an hour. Then we had to knock up the people of the inn and go cold and hungry to bed. We rested the Sabbath day at Siena and went to Florence on Monday.”

It is necessary to carry the reader back for a few years prior to the events already mentioned in order to present a consecutive account of the matters which led to the publication by Dr Bruce, in the year 1855, of a book on the Bayeux Tapestry.

During the summer holidays of 1851 he took a

short trip in Normandy with his friend, Mr John Fenwick. They visited Lillebonne, Falaise, Caen, and Bayeux. At this last place Dr Bruce carefully examined the famous tapestry, which he found exceeded his expectation. The following is a letter to his wife :—

“FALAISE, *July 16th*, 1851.

“I think I told you in my letter yesterday that I propose lecturing at the Literary and Philosophical Society on the Bayeux Tapestry : it will be quite a new subject, very interesting, won't cost me much study, and may be completed in one lecture, certainly not more than two. I am, you know, to lecture at the Young Men's Christian Institution on the subject 'God in History,' and to take the Norman period of our English story : my visit to these parts is giving freshness and vigour to my former views. I have hit upon a subject of debate for next examination which my present journey has suggested—'Were the French or English most to blame for the death of Joan of Arc?' I think I can defend the English ; at all events it will be a fine opportunity of displaying the condition of the period.”

The lectures on the Bayeux Tapestry spoken of in this letter proved a somewhat more serious undertaking than he anticipated. He was engaged in their preparation for a longer time than he had calculated, and the subject, so far from being exhausted in one or two lectures, afforded matter for a course of five. The course was delivered in January and February 1853, and the lectures were illustrated by a coloured

drawing of the tapestry the same size as the original. The lectures comprised a discussion of the question as to whether the tapestry was the work of Queen Matilda. They dwelt upon the information to be gathered from the tapestry concerning the architecture and costumes of the period, and gave an interesting and popular account of the chief events in English history leading up to and following the battle of Hastings.

At the conclusion of the fifth lecture Mr Clayton, in moving a vote of thanks to Dr Bruce for his able and successful elucidation of the historical picture before them, observed—

“Had the Norman invasion taken place a thousand years earlier it would have been celebrated in immortal verse, but the barbarian hordes had swept away the schools of Greece and Rome, and happening in the year 1066, the battle of Hastings, instead of being sung by a Homer, a Virgil, or a Lucan, had been thus chronicled by fair artificers, who in the inscriptions found on the tapestry had doubtless obtained the assistance of such of the clergy as were able at that period to read and write.”

Dr Bruce determined to publish the substance of the lectures in the form of a book.

At the end of the year 1853 he saw the Duke and Duchess of Northumberland in Rome, and obtained permission to dedicate the book to her Grace. The following is an extract from a letter to his wife from Rome :—

“ROME, *December 29th*, 1853.

“I called on the Duke of Northumberland to wish him good-bye. I have got permission to

dedicate the new book to the Duchess. They both enter thoroughly into it. The Duke is anxious that I should not be in a hurry to publish, for he says I may write my name on the tapestry as I have done on the Roman Wall. He suggested to me several topics of investigation, and named persons who he thought would help me, and offered to gather them together at Alnwick Castle to meet me. I am to take my drawing of the tapestry to Alnwick when they get home, and then we will renew our conversation about it."

Dr Bruce took the Duke's advice and was not in a hurry to publish the book. Many other things occupied his attention. It was not until November 1855 that the book appeared, a handsome quarto volume entitled 'The Bayeux Tapestry Elucidated.' It contained plates in colour on a reduced scale of the whole of the tapestry.

The volume was dedicated to the Duchess of Northumberland.

Writing to Mr Way on the 24th October 1855, Dr Bruce said—

"My 'Bayeux Tapestry' is in the binder's hands. I take to myself some credit for having promoted the arts in my native town. Certainly a volume so well printed and so well illustrated and so tastefully bound never before proceeded from it. If I had not been so deeply committed to primeval antiquities, and my leisure had not been so limited, I should have gone more deeply into the subject. I have done my best in the circumstances, and I trust the Duchess will be

pleased to accept of it as a very sincere token of my admiration of her character and gratitude for her attentions to its author."

The following is a copy of the letter written by him to the Duke of Northumberland on the 8th November 1855, sent together with a copy of the book for the acceptance of the Duchess :—

"MY LORD DUKE,—I have at length the pleasure of laying before the Duchess the produce of my studies in the Bayeux Tapestry. I have forwarded a copy of the book by the mail train for her Grace's acceptance. I have also sent one which I beg your Grace will do me the honour to receive.

"As to the mode in which the volume has been got up, I trust your Grace will think with me that it shows a progress in those arts involved in its production in the North of England.

"Of the work itself I may say that it falls very far short of what I know you wished it to be. The absorbing nature of my business avocations, and the preoccupation of the little leisure they leave me by Roman subjects, compelled me, after several despairing efforts, to abandon the discussion of several of those subjects of inquiry which you suggested to me in our conversation on the matter in Rome. I have good hopes, however, that whatever be the defects of the work it will draw attention to a most important period of our English history.—I am, my Lord Duke, your obedient servant,

"J. C. BRUCE."

Dr Bruce received in answer the following letters from the Duke and Duchess :—

“STANWICK, *November 10th*, 1855.

“MY DEAR SIR,—I am much pleased with the appearance of the ‘Bayeux Tapestry.’ Interesting as the needlework is as illustrating the arts and arms of our early history, you have given additional interest to the subject by the manner in which you have explained it, and the book is got up in a form worthy of the subject.

“Pray accept my best thanks.—Believe me,  
yours faithfully, NORTHUMBERLAND.”

“STANWICK, *11th Nov.* 1855.

“REV. SIR,—Pray accept my best thanks for your beautiful work on the Bayeux Tapestry—a work beautiful for the illustrations and its page of dedication, and on a subject to which your antiquarian and classical knowledge has given additional value.

“I accept the volume with much pleasure as a memorial of the kind attention of the author, and remain, Rev. Sir, yours truly,

“E. NORTHUMBERLAND.”

The book was intended to afford a convenient commentary on the incidents recorded on the tapestry.

It admirably answered its purpose, excited a good deal of public attention, and was reviewed favourably in most of the leading organs of the press.

In the year 1855 Algernon, the fourth Duke of Northumberland, who was the patron of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, expressed a

desire that the Society should turn its attention to the collection and preservation of the old music and poetry of the North of England. Accordingly, at the anniversary meeting of this Society, held in February 1855, the following motion was carried :—

“That a committee consisting of Mr Robert White, Mr J. C. Fenwick, and Mr Kell be appointed to collect the Ancient Melodies of Northumberland.”

At a subsequent meeting Mr John Stokoe was added to the committee, which set to work with commendable diligence and zeal under the leadership of Mr Kell, the Town Clerk of Gateshead, and succeeded in gathering a considerable number of melodies together, which, without this effort, would soon have been altogether lost. Of several others the names survived, but the tunes could not be recalled. The attempt to collect ballads and songs not already in print was less successful. Dr Bruce, as one of the secretaries of the Society, attended all the meetings of the committee and took an active part in their proceedings.

On the 19th of November the committee, though not ready to publish any portion of the product of their labours, presented a report of their proceedings to the Duke and Duchess of Northumberland at Alnwick Castle, and Mr Kell at some length reported the result of the researches of the committee. The Duke's pipers, Messrs Green, father and son, and Mr Reid of Shields, who were in attendance, illustrated the remarks of Mr Kell by the performance of some of the most popular Northumberland airs. Mr Kell spoke of the assistance the committee had received



from the late Thomas Ions, Mus. Doc., whose death was a great loss to the committee.

Dr Bruce said the music of Northumberland was in some sort part of our blood and bones, and that though most of the words and names attached to the tunes were such as arose out of circumstances which had occurred during the last hundred years, he had little doubt that most of the tunes had come down to us from a remote period.

The Duke observed that when in Nubia he had heard the same tunes that he had heard in Ireland. His Grace proposed to offer two prizes, to be adjudged by the committee at their discretion, for the best collection of ancient Northumbrian music.

On the 9th of October 1858 a meeting of the committee was held, when it was resolved to prepare some airs for printing. A delay took place, as Mr Kell, who was the soul of the committee, died in June 1862. Mr White collected all the correspondence and documents relating to Northumbrian music and properly arranged them, and they, together with an interesting paper by him upon Northumberland music, were placed in the archives of the Society.

In February 1865 Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland, died.

In 1870 Mr White died, and Dr Bruce, thinking it a pity that the labours of the committee should not in some form be made public, adventured in November 1876 to give a lecture before the Literary and Philosophical Society on the Ancient Pipes and Pipe Music of Northumberland. In that lecture he stated that

he had drawn freely from Mr Kell's papers, and he had made use of a paper upon Pipe Music by Mr J. Clerevaulx Fenwick, and one by the late Mr Thomas Doubleday published in 1857. Quoting from Mr Doubleday, he said—

“Few in number as the graver airs of Northumberland are, their simple beauty is such as to make us regret that more have not been handed down to us.”

“Although pleasing in themselves,” Dr Bruce went on to say, “the Northumberland tunes were not altogether independent of the chant or recitative which in the form of some simple ballad or battle-cry was usually sung to them. Living as we do in exciting and stirring times, we want tunes of greater complexity and power than they yield; but accustomed as our forefathers were to winters of monotony, undisturbed from month to month by any intelligence save that which the little hamlet, clustering around some strong Border peel, afforded, we can readily suppose the tunes which we think dull and lifeless were to them full of life and spirit. Some of our Northumbrian battle tunes are, in fact, dirges. Take Chevy Chase itself: the very name implies that it was used to give vehemence to the grief of men who carried to their fresh-made graves those who fell on that historic field. What more fitting to form a funeral march than the strains of this famous melody? But why should it also be used as a gathering air? The reason is obvious. It brought to the survivors of that well-foughten field the memory of

its deeds of valour. It was a cry from the dead to emulate their valour and to avenge their fall. It required but a difference of time and accent to make the difference between an occasion of stirring activity and of deepest woe. There is something beautiful in this. It speaks well for a people when their energies are aroused by misfortune, when victory is made to arise Phoenix-like from the plain of death, when the dirge of the sire is the battle-cry of the son.

“Much of the music of the pipes is peculiarly adapted for rustic gatherings such as fairs or mell-suppers. In these days of newspapers, of railways and cheap trips, we can scarcely conceive of the pleasure with which these meetings were anticipated, and the rollicking fun which prevailed whilst they lasted. The late Mr Fairless of Hexham, a most lovable man, an ardent antiquary, and an enthusiastic lover of the pipes, told me there was an annual gathering which took place at Fourstones called the ‘Fourstones Pansy Cake,’ and at Corbridge there was another of the same sort called ‘Plough Nights.’ To these meetings persons of all degrees used to come. As they generally assembled the night before, more beds were wanted than the houses of public accommodation could supply, and private persons gave up their spare rooms for the benefit of overflowing strangers. All mingled in the general merriment, class mingled with class, and friendly sympathies were evoked. My gentle and genial friend greatly regretted the falling off in modern times of these friendly gatherings. On one occasion he said to me:

'The middle classes are as frightened of losing caste as the Hindoos. If there is condescension it is among those who truly belong to the upper classes. We were all made to help one another, and He Who has made us must be pleased when we do so.' On the occasion of these public gatherings a new ballad bearing upon local characters and events, and adapted to some old and well-known air, would excite the mirth and claim the boisterous applause of the gathered crowd.

"It is as a domestic instrument that the Northumbrian small-pipes are chiefly valuable. Family ties are of all others the tenderest and the strongest. Opportunities for gladdening the domestic scene are of perpetual recurrence, and hence, as we improve or neglect the opportunity of doing so, we give a bright or gloomy colouring to life. The cheerful notes of the pipes and the merry song which accompanied them were frequently heard of yore in our cottage homes. The children were danced in their mothers' arms to its notes, and when second childhood returned the old man in the chimney corner was roused for a time to joyous sensibility by its stirring strains. As a means of making humble homes happy, I should like to see the use of the Northumberland small-pipes revived. Let every young man who has an ear for music learn to play on them. Then during the hours of toil there will be something to look forward to with pleasure, and when work is laid aside there is a cheerful gathering round the humble hearth, and when all have drunk into the spirit of the

melody, grandfather, mother, the blooming girl, and the youngster who has just felt his feet, may perchance indulge in the cheerful dance free from guile. A family brought up in unity, made mutually dependent for help and happiness upon each other, is strong, and may better than others bear the blasts of adversity. Young men so trained will better than others be able to resist the vicious excitements which in large towns lure them to ruin."

In December 1876 Dr Bruce delivered a lecture on the Northumberland pipes at Alnwick in connection with the Alnwick Literary and Mechanics' Institute. By permission of his Grace the sixth Duke of Northumberland, who, like the fourth Duke, took an active interest in the revival of old Northumberland music, the lecture was delivered in the guest hall of the castle, which was crowded, not less than a thousand persons being present.

The Duke occupied the chair, and in proposing a vote of thanks to Dr Bruce at the conclusion of the lecture, expressed the hope that through his efforts the old music of the county might yet be revived.

In accordance with a suggestion made by Dr Bruce, a pipe competition took place in the Town Hall, Newcastle, on the 10th of December 1877. A committee had been formed to arrange the proceedings; the Duke of Northumberland allowed the competition to be held under his patronage, and Earl Percy was announced to preside. The Duke contributed the first prize, the committee provided a second and a third prize. Unfortunately, owing to the death of Lord Henry Percy, Earl Percy was unable to attend, and the

Mayor of Newcastle presided. The judges were Dr Armes, organist of Durham Cathedral, Mr Crawhall of Newcastle, and Mr Thompson of Sewingshields. The town hall was crowded in every part. The several competitors played many favourite airs, and the greatest enthusiasm prevailed. Dr Bruce, before the commencement of the competition, made a few observations. He said—

“Our Northumbrian music has come down to us from a hoary antiquity, and so long as the blood of our ancestors runs in our veins the melodies which delighted their hearts must cheer and invigorate ours. The simplicity of our ancient music is one reason why I am loath to see it perish. In humble dwellings, where you cannot introduce a piano, you may have the small-pipes. As the happiness of life consists not in ecstatic joys of rare occurrence, but in simple pleasures constantly repeated, I want to preserve amongst us the means of frequent relaxation and enjoyment.”

The prizes were awarded as follows :—

THOMAS CLOUGH of Newsham—First prize.

THOMAS TODD of Choppington—Second prize.

WILLIAM GRAY of Watling Street, Redesdale—  
Third prize.

This most successful competition excited so much interest that it was repeated for several successive years.

In December 1878 Dr Bruce delivered another lecture before the Literary and Philosophical Society on the same subject. He said that

“if our homely native music was to be rescued from oblivion one other effort must be made, and he thought that, though his own poor resources were exhausted, the wealth of our native melodies was not. They were the outcome of musical genius when life was young and society was in its infancy.

“He would say a word or two about the piper of a hundred years ago. In every hamlet in the Border counties there were two or three individuals who quietly, and in their leisure hours, invoked the muse on their tube of cherry-tree or box. There was usually some individual who was pre-eminently master of the instrument, and whose presence was peculiarly acceptable at fairs and corn-suppers and all occasions of merriment. William Allan, the father of the famous Jamie Allan, once the Duke’s piper, was a man of this description. He died at Witton, near Rothbury, in February 1779. Mr Roxby, in his ‘Lay of the Redewater Minstrel,’ gave the following description of him, which might be regarded as a characteristic sketch of the premier piper of the olden times :—

“‘ A stalwart tinkler wight was he,  
An’ weel could mend a pot or pan,  
And deftly Wull could thraw a flee,  
And neatly weave the willow wan’.

“‘ An’ sweetly wild were Allan’s strains,  
An’ mony a reel and jig he blew ;  
Wi’ merry lilts he charmed the swains,  
Wi’ barbèd spear the otter slew.

“‘ Nae mair he’ll scan wi’ anxious eye  
The sandy shores of winding Rede ;  
Nae mair he’ll tempt the finny fry ;  
The king o’ tinklers, Allan’s dead.

“‘ Nae mair at mell or merry night  
The cheering bagpipes Wull shall blaw,  
Nae mair the village throng delight,—  
Grim death has laid the minstrel law.

“‘ Now trouts exulting cut the wave ;  
Triumphant see the otter glide ;  
Their deadly foe lies in the grave,  
Charley and Phoebe by his side.’ ”

The following extract from a letter to his son, Gainsford, refers to this lecture :—

“NEWCASTLE, 5th December 1878.

“I write a line to tell you what I am sure you will be pleased to hear, that my lecture passed off splendidly last night. The lecture-room was crammed, hundreds stood in the passages or sat on the stairs. Sir William Armstrong presided. There were people who had come from Bywell and Stamfordham to hear it, and I believe every one was delighted. It does seem so funny for me to lecture upon music and to draw such large audiences. There was a grand concert in the Town Hall last night, but the ‘Pipes’ beat it hollow.”

By means of these lectures and the public competitions, attention was called to the old music of Northumberland. The Press took the matter up, and the love of the ancient melodies was to some extent revived.

The ‘Newcastle Courant’ had placed at its disposal an extensive *répertoire* of tunes which were peculiar to the Northumbrian pipe, or interesting from association with Northumbrians and Northumberland, and



from 1878 until nearly the close of 1881 one or more of these tunes were published weekly in the 'Courant' under the editorship of Mr Stokoe.

On the 5th November 1879 Dr Bruce gave a third lecture on the pipes and ballad poetry under the auspices of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, which, like the former lectures, was largely attended.

At the anniversary meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle held in 1881, a resolution was passed authorising the senior secretary, Dr Bruce, and Mr Stokoe to print a work upon the ancient melodies of Northumbria. Accordingly in the year 1882 a collection of ballads, melodies, and small-pipe tunes of Northumbria was published by the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle. The book consisted of two parts: part one, ballads and songs of Northumbria, together with the melodies to which they were sung; part two, song and dance tunes adapted to the Northumberland small-pipes, together with other popular local melodies.

Very great care was taken in the editing of the book, and it contains all the information available at the time on the subject.

In July 1885 Dr Bruce gave a lecture in London, at the International Inventions Exhibition, on "The Northumberland small-pipes, and the songs and ballad-music of the North of England."

The lecture was illustrated by performances by noted pipers, including the piper to the Duke of Northumberland, and the ballad-pieces were sung by a select choir, chosen by Mr Westwood Tosh, music-instructor to the school-board of London. The lecture was largely attended and evoked considerable interest.

A Society was formed for the cultivation and encouragement of the folk-music of the Border, and named the Northumbrian Small-pipes Society. Among its patrons were the Duke of Northumberland, the Duke of Portland, Earl Percy, Sir Matthew White Ridley, Bart., Sir Edward Grey, Bart., M.P., Sir John Swinburne, Bart., and Sir George Grove. The Society has issued some valuable and interesting publications, amongst others an instruction book for the Northumbrian small-pipes by J. W. Fenwick, a book which contains valuable practical directions for playing this instrument.

## CHAPTER XI.

BIBLE SOCIETY — TOWN MISSION — THE ROYAL JUBILEE SCHOOL  
— YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION DAILY PRAYER-  
MEETING — BRANDLING PLACE HOME.

To convey an adequate conception of Dr Bruce's character, energy, and catholic sympathies, reference must be made to some of the various religious and philanthropic societies in which throughout his life he took the keenest interest. The Newcastle Bible Society especially occupied a very high place in his regard. His father, John Bruce, had from the year 1823 until his death in 1834 served as one of the hon. secretaries of this society, and had taken an active part in promoting its welfare. In December 1834, shortly after John Bruce's death, his son, John Collingwood Bruce, was requested, by a resolution of the committee, to fill the office held by his late respected father as secretary of the society until the next anniversary meeting, when he was appointed one of the hon. secretaries, an office which he continued to hold until his death in 1892, thus holding the office for a period of fifty-six years. Mr Thomas Pumphrey, one of the hon. secretaries of the society, in a letter referring to

the work done by Dr Bruce for the Bible Society, says :—

“It is an unusual record of continued service fulfilled in no mere formal way, but with an earnestness of spirit and zeal which seemed never to flag. With his earnestness was combined such a bright and lively humour and mental scintillation as often enlivened the meetings of the committee during the thirty years in which it was my privilege to be his colleague.”

At the first meeting of the committee of the Newcastle Bible Society after his death, the following minute was entered in their books :—

“It is our mournful duty to record the decease of our senior secretary, Dr Bruce, in whom the Bible Society has lost one of its most faithful friends, and the local committee one of its wisest counsellors. In bygone years, when travelling was more difficult than it is to-day, Dr Bruce was ever ready to advocate the interests of the society at its country meetings. The annual reports were drawn up by him until within a few years of his decease, often evidencing his Christian earnestness of purpose, and enlivened by thoughts from his cultured mind: his presence on the Newcastle platform was a familiar feature each succeeding year. He has laboured earnestly with many men whose lives were an honour to our town.”

Another religious effort to which Dr Bruce devoted himself was the Newcastle “Town Mission,” now known as the “City Mission,” established in the

year 1846. At that time there were comparatively few clergy in Newcastle, and it was impossible for them to pay pastoral visits to a tithe of the people in their parishes. Large numbers of the poor who did not resort to any place of worship would but for some agency like the "Town Mission" have been left altogether outside religious influence.

The object of the "Town Mission" was to supply missionaries to visit these people in their homes and to call their attention to the truths of religion. The Society's work, although useful, was unobtrusive, and it was difficult to provide funds sufficient to carry it on. Dr and Mrs Bruce at a very early period in the history of the mission exerted themselves to provide funds for its support. Other means failing, a bazaar was established in the year 1851, and was held annually shortly before Christmas from that time forward. Mrs Bruce always took a prominent part, and spared no labour in making herself and collecting from her friends articles for sale. She was assisted in this work by her daughter, Mrs Philipson, up to the time of her death in August 1874. For one or two years the bazaar was held in the schoolroom at Percy Street; but in time it outgrew this, and was held in the Music Hall or one of the other public rooms in the town.

An amount of about £300 was generally realised at these annual sales. As Mrs Bruce advanced in years she felt the work more laborious, and in a letter to his son in November 1890 Dr Bruce says—

"Your mother is *very very* busy with her bazaar for the 'City Mission.' We are having so many bazaars I fear it may not be so successful as usual; still it is our duty to do what we can to

help on a great work. I should not be surprised if this bazaar be the last for this object; at all events your mother, on whom the weight of this effort will fall, ought to be released from exertions of this kind."

In the Royal Jubilee School Dr Bruce took a deep interest. His father had taken an active part in the establishment of the school. In the year 1808 attention had been directed to the subject of the education of the poor by papers read before the Literary and Philosophical Society.

"In consequence of this a number of individuals, as well members of the society as others, joined in a respectful application to the corporation for their countenance and support in an effort to provide better means of education. This was productive of the desired effect, for soon afterwards the mayor and corporation publicly advertised their intention to bring forward a plan for this important purpose."<sup>1</sup>

Shortly afterwards advantage was taken of the preparations for a public rejoicing, such as was general throughout the kingdom in October 1809, to commemorate the happy event of the entrance of King George III. upon the fiftieth year of his reign. The King took great interest in the education of the children of the nation, and at the opening of a school at Weymouth his Majesty made use of these words: "It is my wish that every poor child in my dominions may be taught to read the Bible." It was thought by

<sup>1</sup> Quotation from John Bruce's Memoir of Dr Hutton.

the people of Newcastle that it was better to show their loyalty by erecting a school than by having an illumination. At a public meeting of the town, held in the Guildhall, it was resolved that, instead of illuminating, a collection should be made from house to house throughout the town for the purpose of establishing a school which might remain as a lasting monument of respect to the venerable monarch, and also tend to promote his benevolent wish. Subscriptions from the townspeople amounted to over £730. Three hundred guineas was given by the corporation, and a further sum of £652 was given by other persons, including £50 from the Duke of Northumberland. The foundation-stone of the school was laid on the 4th June 1810 by Major Anderson, and the school was called the Royal Jubilee School.

“Prior to this,” writes Dr Bruce, “the children of the labouring classes had very scanty means of obtaining even the rudiments of education.”

There were charity schools in connection with St Nicholas', St John's, St Andrew's, and All Saints', but these schools were inadequate for the education of the poor children of the town, and as they were all church schools, many dissenters had a conscientious objection to sending their children to them. There was great need for a school such as the Royal Jubilee School. It is stated in 'White's Directory' for 1826 that no less than 3650 boys had up to that date received the benefits of that school, of whom 482 then remained under the tuition of the then master. Mr John Bruce was secretary of the school committee from the commencement, and served the office until

his death, when he was succeeded by his son, who remained secretary as long as the school continued. Thus, during the school's existence of seventy years the office of secretary was held by father and son—i.e., by Mr John Bruce for twenty-three years, and by John Collingwood Bruce for forty-seven years.

An excellent education was given to the boys. Mr John Bruce, who was a distinguished mathematician, took special interest in the teaching of mental arithmetic. Dr Bruce, who during his later years was wont to boast that for half a century he had never missed being present at the annual examination, related that his father used to lead him by the hand as a child to witness the mental arithmetic exercises at this school. The practice of mental arithmetic was carried on with such success that to a stranger the proficiency of the boys in exercises of this character seemed astonishing. In the interesting history of the Royal Jubilee School, written by Mr John Cochrane,<sup>1</sup> an amusing story is told respecting the incredulity of a gentleman who was present at an annual examination when one of these exhibitions took place. The following is the passage :—

“At one of our examinations, when a considerable number of the public were present, the mayor, several aldermen, and councillors, and many of the subscribers to the funds, Mr Falconer and Dr Bruce amongst others, Mr Cuffe (the master of the school) wrote a long compound-addition sum on the blackboard. He wrote rapidly, but rapidly as he wrote we kept

<sup>1</sup> The Royal Jubilee School, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. A brief history of the institution. Newcastle-upon-Tyne: printed and published by Cochrane & Co. at the Summerhill Press, 289 Westgate Road. 1904.



pace with him mentally, and he had no sooner finished writing the last figure than we had our hands up waiting to give the answer. The answer being given and found correct, a gentleman among the audience rose in great indignation and demanded to know how the authorities of the school dare try to gull the public by such a palpable fraud as they had just witnessed. He refused to accept the assurances of those who had seen it done before that the exhibition was perfectly genuine. 'Nonsense,—it's an utter impossibility!' he exclaimed. Up rose Dr Bruce, indignant and eager to defend the fair fame of the school which he loved almost as well as his own. 'Come forward, sir, and set the boys a sum yourself.' Our accuser was reluctant, but the doctor would brook no refusal, and so he was compelled to take the chalk and begin to write down a problem on the blackboard. He wrote slowly, and we followed him with the greatest ease. The instant he finished writing the last figure a score of right hands shot up simultaneously. 'Write the answer down on your slates, and then hand the slates over here,' said the doctor. 'Now, sir, I suppose you are satisfied there has been no collusion this time; add your sum up and then we will examine the slates.' He went at his task laboriously, figure by figure. When at length he finished our slates were examined, and every answer was found to be correct."

The school afforded a sound commercial education to those who were willing to avail themselves of its

advantages, and many of the scholars in after life obtained important and responsible positions.

After the establishment of Board-schools it was considered no longer necessary to continue the Royal Jubilee School as a separate institution, and on the 28th March 1881 the ceremony of transferring the school to the Newcastle School Board took place in the presence of many visitors and 453 scholars. Dr Bruce was in the chair, and after delivering an address giving the boys sound practical advice, he formally handed over the keys of the school to Mr Luckley, chairman of the School Board, who gave an address appropriate to the occasion. Mr Cochrane, in his book on the Royal Jubilee School, says—

“The school lost all its unique and special features and became an ordinary board-school. The change no doubt was for the better, but still it was one which could only be regarded with regret by the boys of the old foundation.”

For more than 25 years Dr Bruce held the post of President of the Newcastle-upon-Tyne Young Men's Christian Association, and during that time it greatly increased in numbers and usefulness. He frequently delivered lectures on various subjects to the young men of the association. In 1876 he delivered a course of five lectures on “Old Newcastle,” giving what he called a slight and familiar sketch of the city from the earliest times, and reviving recollections of the Newcastle of his boyhood.

These lectures were published in 1904, and form a small octavo volume. The proceeds of the sale were devoted, according to his wish, to the funds of the Young Men's Christian Association.

As Dr Hodgkin wrote in a preface to the volume last mentioned—

“Dr Bruce’s devotion to the interests of the Young Men’s Christian Association was constant and untiring. It was perhaps sometimes with a little amusement that the people of Newcastle saw the meetings and excursions of the young men headed by one who was almost their oldest fellow-citizen, but even here a certain continuing youthfulness of temperament and freshness of interest in the young life around him made us all feel that he was not out of his right place.”

In the year 1884 the association acquired new and more commodious premises, and they signalised the opening by a public celebration.

A luncheon was held in the Assembly Rooms, Westgate Road. His Grace the Duke of Northumberland presided, and the Earl of Ravensworth, Earl Cairns, Dr Wilberforce (the Lord Bishop of Newcastle), Sir W. Armstrong, and many other distinguished persons, were present. Earl Cairns proposed the toast, “Success to the Newcastle-upon-Tyne Young Men’s Christian Association,” coupled with the names of Dr Bruce and Mr Geo. Williams of London. His Lordship, speaking of Dr Bruce, said

“that to his energy and interest the association in Newcastle owed much of the success which it had achieved. He was famed over the country for his antiquarian lore and skill, but he was not less famed in every circle in which he was known for his benevolence and hearty sympathy with all good Christian work.”

Dr Bruce, in responding, said they all knew the temptations to which young men were exposed in large towns and cities like that of Newcastle. Many of them had seen young men of great promise coming from the country to the town, meeting with temptation and falling a prey to it, losing character and position and health. The object of their association was to afford a helping hand to the young men who came under their influence. It was to the young men of the association themselves that they looked mainly, to establish a healthful influence over those with whom they came in contact. A kindly look, a warm pressure of the hand, a simple word of inquiry and good wishes, might turn the course of one who was beginning to tread the downward path. Right happy was he to know that in multitudes of instances that had been the effect of the exertions and efforts of young men connected with their institution.

In September 1859 a daily prayer-meeting was established at which a number of persons interested in the religious work of the town assembled at mid-day. Samuel Frost, M.D., James Sang, M.D., and Dr Bruce were mainly instrumental in promoting this meeting. Dr Bruce was deeply interested in its welfare; he scarcely ever missed being present, and frequently presided. Shortly before the year 1873 the daily prayer-meeting was for a time discontinued, but on the occasion of a visit to Newcastle of Messrs Moody and Sankey in the autumn of that year it was resumed, and continued without a break until after Dr Bruce's death in 1892.

There arose out of this prayer-meeting a charitable institution affording a temporary refuge for unfortunate women. Dr Bruce was mainly instrumental in founding it, and to the end of his life devoted much of his time and energy to its support and maintenance. Speaking at a meeting held in support of the home in 1862, he gave the following account of its origin :—

“On the 21st of March 1861 a meeting for prayer in connection with the daily prayer-meeting was held in the lecture-room of the Presbyterian Church, Blackett Street. It commenced at 7 o'clock in the evening and terminated at midnight. The object of the meeting was more especially the revival of religion in the churches and among the professing Christians of the town. We thought little of the poor outcasts who at that very time were thronging the street outside. Some friends, however, mistaking the nature of our meeting, asked them in, and several came. The Word took effect, and some were ashamed and confounded at the course they were pursuing. A few days after the meeting a highly respectable woman whom I knew called upon me to tell me this, and asked me what was to be done. I asked if as many as six wished to forsake profligacy ; she said she believed twenty was nearer the number. Here it was evident that something must be done quickly. We could not wait until the next committee meeting of the Penitentiary, and we must make provision for more women than that institution could receive. Temporary expedients

were at first resorted to, of which I shall speak presently. The friends who had taken part in the prolonged prayer-meeting felt that a new duty was incumbent upon them. We accordingly called a midnight meeting proper, which was well attended by the class whom we meant to serve. I shall never forget that meeting; its strange, its harrowing aspect is photographed indelibly upon my brain. The result was that about twenty-six weeping prodigals sought our help. What to do with them that night we could hardly tell. We had made provision for some, but not for so many. Eight of them remained in the building all night under the charge of Mrs Higgins. Next day the house, 44 Richmond Street, was taken, and some shake-downs having been provided, our charge was transferred to it the same evening. We are about to leave that house; I thank my God that He is providing us with a better, but I shall leave it with regret. Many hallowed associations are connected with it. There I have seen the Word of God listened to with an eagerness I have not elsewhere witnessed."

At the time the Home was established there was no institution in Newcastle which offered a temporary refuge to fallen women or supplied the kind of help which was much needed. It was a stepping-stone by which those who had fallen into a gulf of misery might make their escape. The door of the Home opened by day and night to the knock of the outcast.

During the first eighteen months of its existence

•

it received 186 inmates. Of these 107 were restored to society, 31 had been lost sight of, 41 were pursuing doubtful courses or had returned to evil.

The house, 44 Richmond Street, was found to be too small. In October 1862 Mr Richard Burdon Sanderson of Jesmond, with great liberality, placed at the disposal of the committee of the Home a chapel at Brandling Place to be adapted to the purposes of the Home. A subscription was opened to carry on the necessary alterations, and in 1863 the Home was transferred to the new premises. There its work was carried on with great success until after Dr Bruce's death. He generally on Sunday night went to the Home and conducted a religious service. He seldom allowed inclement weather to prevent him walking across the moor from his house to the Home, and always spoke of the services on Sunday night as most earnest and touching.

## CHAPTER XII.

ROYAL INFIRMARY, NEWCASTLE—1868, DR GIBB'S LETTER—IMPROVEMENTS MADE IN THE MANAGEMENT—1888, DR BRUCE ELECTED CHAIRMAN OF HOUSE COMMITTEE—LETTER SYSTEM ABOLISHED—FULL REPRESENTATION OF WORKING MEN ON HOUSE COMMITTEE—1891, DR BRUCE'S SPEECH AT A MEETING OF WORKING-MEN GOVERNORS—RESOLUTION OF HOUSE COMMITTEE ON THE DEATH OF DR BRUCE—1892, PUBLIC MEETING CALLED BY THE MAYOR TO CONSIDER THE ERECTION OF NEW WING TO THE INFIRMARY IN MEMORY OF DR BRUCE—LADIES' SINGING BAND AND FLOWER MISSION IN THE INFIRMARY—DR BRUCE'S EFFORTS TO GET LEAVE FOR THE BAND TO SING IN THE WARDS OF THE WORKHOUSE INFIRMARY.

THE Newcastle Infirmary, which in 1887, the Jubilee year of Queen Victoria, obtained Her Majesty's gracious permission to take the title of Royal Infirmary, was one of the institutions in which Dr Bruce took the liveliest interest. In the year 1840 he became a life governor, in 1869 he was elected a member of the House Committee, and in 1888 chairman of the House Committee, a position he held until his death in 1892.

The Newcastle Infirmary is one of the oldest of the provincial medical charities in the kingdom. It has existed for more than one hundred and fifty years, and has during that time carried on its work with conspicuous efficiency. Like many old institutions the Infirmary was in danger of not keeping pace with the times, having regard to the rapid advance of surgical

.



and medical science. In the year 1868 a letter was addressed by Dr Gibb, one of the honorary surgeons of the Infirmary, to the chairman of the governors, containing serious complaints relating to the nursing department and other matters concerning the management of the hospital. A special committee was appointed, and important changes were recommended with the view of placing the Infirmary upon a more efficient basis. These recommendations were duly carried out, but they involved increased expenditure, and difficulties existed in procuring sufficient financial support from the public to meet the additional outlay.

The report for 1873 stated—

“The financial condition of the Infirmary is becoming from year to year more and more a subject of anxiety. Its expenditure has increased at a rate with which its income does not keep pace.”

To follow here the various efforts that were made from time to time to improve the efficiency of the hospital, and to place it in a better financial position, would involve a long history; it is enough to state that Dr Bruce took an active part in all these measures. At the quarterly court of governors held at the Infirmary on Thursday 4th November, 1887, the Earl of Ravensworth (Henry George, second earl) in the chair, it was resolved on the motion of Dr Bruce, seconded by the Mayor of Newcastle, B. C. Browne, Esq. (now Sir Benjamin Browne),

That a special committee of the governors be appointed to confer with the House Committee as

to the past management of the Infirmary and the best mode of extricating it from its present financial position, and to report to a special court of the governors what they recommend should be done under the circumstances. Dr Bruce, in the course of his speech in support of the motion, said—

“For the last thirty years or more I have taken a deep interest in the Infirmary. I became a member of its committee in 1869, and for some time before that I used to attend occasionally the meetings of the committee in virtue of my right as a governor. In addition to attending the meetings of the committee, I have for the last ten years or more spent the whole of every Wednesday afternoon in the wards of the Infirmary in company with a band of ladies who sing to the patients and endeavour in a variety of ways to cheer and comfort them. In this way I may be supposed to know something of the character and wants of the patients, and of the kind of treatment they receive from the medical officers and nurses.”

Dr Bruce added that he believed the management of the hospital to be good and efficient, and that although of late years there had been an annual excess of expenditure over income of from £3000 to £5000 the fact had never been concealed, and the attention of the governors and the public had been called to it in report after report. The causes of this state of things were the increase in the number of patients, the increased cost of their maintenance and treatment, and the fact that for nearly a quarter

of a century the subscriptions to the hospital had been virtually stationary. He said it was curious to observe how rapid had been the increase of the number of operations performed in the Infirmary. In 1876, the first year in which the report alludes to the introduction of the antiseptic system of dressing wounds, the number of operations was 297, in 1885 it was 1129. This increase was no doubt largely owing to the increased safety with which operations could now be performed. In conclusion, he stated that he believed the Infirmary to be a thoroughly well-managed institution.

“All classes of officers in it do their duty skilfully and kindly. If there is any real cause of complaint I could not but hear of it.”

A special committee was appointed, and they made an elaborate report. Among other things they expressed the opinion that the time had come for abandoning the “letter” system and making the Infirmary a free institution.

The report of 1888 stated that this recommendation of the committee had been carried out. It said—

“Admission to the hospital is now free; the labour of seeking for letters of admission is now entirely done away with.

“In making the hospital free it was thought that it would command to a greater extent than before the support of the working classes. This expectation has been realised, the collections sent in from the factories of the district exceeding by nearly a thousand pounds the amounts subscribed by them in the previous year.”

The above-mentioned report contained the following passage :—

“That the subscription list ought to be very much greater than it is there can be no question. The subscriptions for 1874 amounted to £3168, whereas notwithstanding the increase in the wealth and population of Newcastle and its neighbourhood, a like sum had never been realised, and in 1885 the subscription list was £200 less than in 1874.

“‘The Hospital Saturday’ Fund amounted in 1885 to £1507, and in 1886 to £1770. But one penny per week from every workman at Elswick Works alone would considerably exceed that amount, and the general adoption of systematic weekly giving to the funds of the infirmary in the workshops on the Tyne by employers and employed is not more than the necessities of the case require, and less than that would leave its energies greatly crippled.”

As chairman of the House Committee, Dr Bruce was concerned in all matters affecting the management of the hospital. He was not content to be there only on committee days : he was frequently at the hospital, and was in constant communication with the resident medical officers and other officers of the house. He made himself acquainted with all that was going forward, and never lost an opportunity of endeavouring to interest the public in general and the working men in particular in the beneficent work of the institution.

It became obvious that the proper way to improve the income of the institution was to interest the

working men employed in the great factories of Northumberland and Durham in the management of the hospital.

Already in the report of 1885 it was stated that in the previous year's report attention had been called to the propriety of securing the attendance of some working men at the meetings of the committee of the Infirmary, and the report of 1885 stated that this desirable object had been accomplished and three working men had been included in the committee, who had worked together with the other members of the committee with the utmost harmony.

It was felt that it was right to give to the working men fuller representation upon the House Committee, so that those working in the district might be satisfied that the hospital was properly and economically managed, and in the report of 1888 it was stated—

“As the working men of the north were expected to contribute largely to the funds of the Infirmary, it seems right that they should be fully represented on the House Committee. This has been done, nine members selected by the working-class governors having been added to the fourteen selected by the ordinary governors. This system has given entire satisfaction.”

As an instance of efforts to interest the public, reference may be made to a statement Dr Bruce, as chairman of the House Committee, made on the 14th of November 1889. He gave a detailed account of a fortnight's work in the surgical wards in the Infirmary, and thus concluded his observations:—

“Such are the notes I have made after hearing from the resident staff what has been the work

of one department of the Infirmary during the last few days. I have said nothing of the medical department, where also the work of mercy goes on on a very large scale. Perhaps the last fortnight has been a more busy one than usual, but I feel sure that if the community of the two northern counties were aware of the blessing which the Newcastle Infirmary is to afflicted humanity, they would not suffer the committee to struggle with the disadvantages of an overdrawn account."

In February 1891 a meeting of working-men governors was held, over which Alderman Stephens presided. Dr Bruce gave an address with a view of arousing interest in the Infirmary. The Newcastle 'Daily Chronicle' of the 13th of February thus refers to the meeting:—

"The attendance was large, and bespoke the hopeful interest the working men are taking in the institution. Every one present was glad of the presence of Dr Bruce, and the enthusiasm which marked the tones of his gentle voice produced a visible effect on those who listened to his address. There are few men in Newcastle who have lived so long in it as Dr Bruce, and there are still fewer in it who know so much about the working of the Infirmary as does our esteemed and venerable fellow-townsmen. He has marked its progress for years, and has rejoiced, as he told his auditors last week, in the immense strides that medical science has made. Nothing could have been happier or more to

the point than his remarks on the value of chloroform and the antiseptic methods. He counted these as amongst the greatest blessings that had been forthcoming for suffering humanity, and he mentioned cases coming under his own observation where lives had been saved which would assuredly have been lost under the old treatment. The speech, in short, was alike a tribute to the skill of the medical staff and the value of the institution, and the applause with which it was received testified to the appreciation of all present. The discussion which followed was all in one direction. It all pointed to the wish that working men, heartily as they have supported the Infirmary, might still more in the future give aid to an institution that is essentially their own."

On the occasion of the death of Dr Bruce the House Committee of the Infirmary, on the 7th April 1892, passed this resolution :—

"The House Committee of the Royal Infirmary deeply deplore the lamented death of the Rev. John Collingwood Bruce, LL.D., D.C.L., their much revered chairman, and desire to place on record their sense of the great loss the institution has sustained thereby.

"The committee have it in remembrance that Dr Bruce has been a governor for over half a century, one of their colleagues since the year 1869, and their chairman for five years. In all these positions he rendered most valuable services on many occasions. His wide knowledge,

mature experience, and wise counsel were instrumental in bringing to a satisfactory termination questions of the greatest importance."

The following is an extract from the chaplain's report in April 1892:—

"In every department of the work which comes under my own supervision I miss the wise counsel and practical help of the late Dr Bruce, whose aid was never sought in vain on behalf of the sick and needy."

On 29th June 1892 a public meeting, convened by the Mayor in response to a requisition, was held in the Mayor's Chambers, Guildhall, Newcastle, to consider the question of erecting new buildings for the Royal Infirmary to perpetuate the memory of the late Rev. Dr Bruce, as resolved by the House Committee of the Infirmary.

The Mayor said it was well known to them that for a great number of years the accommodation in the Infirmary had been limited, and that they had been exceedingly pressed for room. A proposal for a New Infirmary had been before the public for a great number of years. Various suggestions had been made as to its position, but the last phase of that matter was that it was very desirable indeed that the Infirmary should remain on its present site, and that whatever was done in the way of erecting a new building it should be in close proximity to the Central Station, and to those great works from which they had their accidents.

Alderman Stephens moved—

"That the time has arrived when a New Infirmary for Newcastle should be erected with



all the more modern appliances, and that a commencement be made to perpetuate the memory of the late Dr Collingwood Bruce by the building of a new wing or pavilion to be called 'The Bruce Wing.'

"In former days he advocated the removal of the Infirmary to some open space, but after he had heard the opinion of the medical men connected with the institution, he came to the conclusion that the position of the present Infirmary was the best place.

"When they brought to mind the great work which the late Dr Bruce did in connection with the Infirmary, especially during the last twenty years, it was considered that the present was a most opportune time for doing something to perpetuate his memory, and that this should be done by building a new wing to the present institution."

Dr Philipson seconded the resolution.

"As to the site, the House Committee and the Honorary Medical Staff, after great deliberation, had come to the conclusion that the advantages of the present site far outweighed the disadvantages, and that there was a great deal to commend the present site to the acceptance of those interested in the future of the Infirmary. The present site, possibly supplemented in area, would be the most appropriate site for the New Infirmary."

Alderman T. Bell said—

"If they were going to hamper the thing with a lot of doubts whether it was a proper site,

they would be doing no good. The opinion of the town was decidedly that the Infirmary should remain where it was, and that they should enlarge it."

He suggested an amendment to the resolution in the following terms, to which the mover and seconder agreed :—

"That the time has arrived when a New Infirmary for Newcastle should be erected on the present site, with all the more modern appliances of recently-built institutions of a similar character, and that a commencement be made to perpetuate the memory of the late Dr Collingwood Bruce by the building of a new wing or pavilion to be called 'The Bruce Wing.'"

The amended resolution was carried without opposition. This resolution, however, was never acted upon,—not from any want of respect to the memory of Dr Bruce, but because of the change of opinion on the part of many people respecting the fitness of the old site. Mr John Hall made the magnificent offer of £100,000 towards the cost of the new building, on condition that it should be erected on the Leazes or on the Town Moor. It is not necessary to follow all the steps that were taken towards the erection of the new building. An Act of Parliament was obtained permitting the erection of the New Infirmary on the Leazes, and a splendid building is now in course of erection on that site. As a memorial to Dr Bruce, a recumbent marble figure was placed in the Cathedral of St Nicholas.

In connection with the Infirmary may be mentioned

the work done by the singing band, in which Dr Bruce took a great interest. In a tract published in 1876 he gives an account of the origin of this band :—

“At a meeting held in the year 1875 in the Central Hall one of the questions proposed for discussion was, ‘How recent converts and other young Christians might best be employed in the Master’s service.’

“It fell to my lot to open the inquiry, and I ventured to suggest so far as young ladies were concerned that such of them as possessed a good voice and skill in music might do good service by banding together and singing the sweet songs of Sion in the wards of the Infirmary and the cottages of the poor.

“Not long after some young ladies came to me at the close of the mid-day prayer-meeting and said: ‘We have been practising together and are willing to sing in the Infirmary; can you tell us how we should set about it?’ The preliminaries were soon arranged, and on the afternoon of March the 22nd, 1875, we made our first attempt. Our band numbered on this occasion about ten voices, having as our leader then and subsequently Mr Robert Simpson. Once every week from that time to the present the work has been continued without any intermission, the number of singers varying from ten to twenty. The usual mode of proceeding has been this: After the party is seated the hymn to be sung is quietly but distinctly read out. The singing of the hymn is then proceeded with in as articulate

a manner as possible. Two hymns are usually sung in each ward. After the large wards, of which there are six, have been visited, the party divides into two or three, with the view of overtaking all the smaller wards which are occupied by two or more patients. Usually six or seven of these are visited. About two hours suffice to go round the Infirmary. Shortly after the service of song had been begun, a young lady, a resident in Ryton, who had for six years been confined to her couch, heard of it. She requested her friends and neighbours to supply her with the superfluous flowers of their gardens; these she made up into neat bouquets, and putting them through an aperture made in old calling cards, on which she had written texts of Scripture, sent them to her friends of the singing band for distribution amongst the patients. This practice she continued until the approach of winter last year, when she died. The plan which she so happily inaugurated has not been allowed to drop. Each Wednesday baskets of flowers from various gardens, especially from those on the North Tyne, arrive at the Infirmary, and some of the ladies going there an hour beforehand with a store of cards ready prepared, quickly make them up for presentation. The mere appearance in these chambers of sickness of a number of young ladies bearing in every look the tokens of true Christian sympathy necessarily infuses into the minds of the dejected a ray of hope; then the soft and simple music, mainly of a cheerful character, has charms which few can resist."

In his journal the chaplain of the Infirmary, the Rev. Richard Brent, made the following entry under date of March 1, 1876 :—

“I should like to bear witness to the pleasure afforded to the patients by the weekly singing choir, and as to how they are cheered by the kindly words spoken to them by the ladies as they pass through the wards. Many of the patients look forward to Wednesday as much as to a visiting day.”

The singing band still continues to afford comfort and consolation to the patients in the Infirmary. The Rev. J. Mitchell, who succeeded Mr Brent as chaplain to the Infirmary, writes :—

“The ladies of the singing band carried on their Christian labours in such a way as not to interfere in the smallest degree with the methodical working of the hospital.”

In an address delivered at North Shields in the month of March 1880, Dr Bruce gave the following additional particulars respecting the plan of operation adopted by the singing band.

“In the winter season we were sadly put to for want of flowers. As a substitute for these we prepare floral cards; we gather wild-flowers and ferns in the summer, and, pressing them, attach them in the winter to the cards on which we write our texts. We are much indebted to many persons not of the band who aid us in preparing the cards which we distribute weekly. In this respect we have the kindly countenance of

all classes. We have had floral cards from her Grace Eleanor, the Duchess-Dowager of Northumberland, who one day accompanied us in our rounds in the Infirmary. Her Grace Louisa, Duchess of Northumberland, has laid us under very great obligations. She prepares dried flowers with care, arranges them on cards with great taste and skill, and with her own hand writes out neatly and distinctly passages of Scripture calculated to direct and cheer the sufferer."

The following extract from a letter dated January 13, 1883, written by Louisa, Duchess of Northumberland, to Dr Bruce, shows the interest her Grace took in preparing cards to be given to foreign seamen in the Infirmary :—

"I should like to know by-and-by whether the Danish, Swedish, Norwegian, and German sailors can easily read the Latin characters. I was told by a Dutch friend of ours that probably any sailor sufficiently educated to read at all would easily read Latin characters, but I should like to be *sure* this is true; if not, I must try and write Gothic characters. The Greek is very easy to me, as I learnt Greek in my youth."

In the address already mentioned delivered at North Shields, Dr Bruce made the following observations respecting the workhouse :—

"I have been anxious to introduce a band of workers similar to that which visits the Infirmary into the infirmary of the workhouse at Newcastle, but I have not as yet succeeded. Ladies were ready to go, but the door was shut. I shall try

again. I have myself gone two or three times through the wards of the workhouse infirmary of Newcastle. The inmates deeply excited my sympathy. A few people sit round the fire, looking listlessly into it. They have nothing to do, nothing to talk about, nothing to think about. The majority of the inmates are old people who are confined to their beds. There is nothing to excite their hopes or their fears, nothing to awaken their attention, nothing even to elicit a smile or gild their wrinkled countenances. What a boon it would be if once a-week they might expect to hail a band of bright cheerful Christian young ladies who would cheer them with song, listen kindly to their tale of woe, and point them to the bright fields beyond the swelling flood. I am glad that the workhouse of this town is so visited. May the choicest blessings of heaven rest upon the heads of the visitors."

Dr Bruce made inquiries of the officials of the Tynemouth Union with a view to ascertain whether any inconvenience had resulted from the admission of the ladies of the North Shields singing band to sing in the sick wards of the Tynemouth workhouse. He received in answer a letter dated the 6th June 1881 from Mr J. R. Proctor, the chairman of the Tynemouth Union, from which the following extracts are made:—

"For a considerable time past a small band of ladies (having first obtained the consent of the Board of Guardians) have regularly attended one afternoon in the week in the sick wards, and I believe their services are highly appreciated

by the inmates and very generally approved by the Board, and the master, and matron, and nurses.

“When we consider the dull monotony of their lives, I think we may well rejoice in these manifestations of Christian charity towards the poor, and I do not think there is a Guardian in our Union who wishes to prevent them.”

Dr Bruce was not able, although himself a member of the Board of Guardians, to induce the Board to admit the singing band to the wards of the Newcastle workhouse hospital.

On the 27th of May 1881 a resolution was passed requesting the house committee to consider and report on the advisability of admitting the flower mission to the wards of the workhouse hospital. On the 1st of June 1881 the matter came before the house committee, and the proposal was negatived by the casting vote of the chairman.

On the 24th of June Mr Scholfield gave notice that he would, on that day fortnight, move that Dr Bruce should be permitted one afternoon in the week to introduce some young ladies forming a flower mission to the hospital of the workhouse for the purpose of singing hymns and distributing flowers as practised in the Royal Infirmary. On the 8th of July Mr Scholfield moved the resolution of which he had given notice. It was seconded by Dr Bruce. On a division there appeared for the motion, 11; against the motion, 16. The chairman therefore declared the motion lost.

The majority of the Guardians who opposed the introduction of the singing band may have been afraid



that proselytising would take place, but the experience of the work carried out in the Newcastle Infirmary and in the Tynemouth workhouse proved that such fears were groundless, and even had there been any danger of the kind it would have been easy for the Guardians to have made regulations to prevent it.

In order to perpetuate the regard which the ladies of the singing band entertained for the memory of Dr Bruce, they erected in the chapel of the Royal Infirmary a marble tablet bearing the following inscription :—

*"Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren,  
ye have done it unto me."—MATT. xx. 40.*

THIS TABLET IS PLACED HERE BY THE MEMBERS OF THE  
INFIRMARY SINGING BAND, IN LOVING REMEMBRANCE OF  
**John Collingwood Bruce, LL.D., D.C.L.,** THEIR REVERED  
PRESIDENT AND LEADER FOR SEVENTEEN YEARS.

DEPARTED THIS LIFE, APRIL 5TH, 1892,  
AGED 86 YEARS.

It is intended to place this tablet in the chapel of the new Victoria Infirmary.

## CHAPTER XIII.

1851, DR BRUCE LEAVES CLAVERING PLACE CHAPEL—CONDUCTS SERVICES IN HIRED ROOM—JOINS BLACKETT STREET CHURCH—1854, VISIT TO LONDON—1855, HIS ELDEST SON GOES TO LONDON—SECOND SON BORN—OXENDON CHAPEL—1841, DR ROBERT MOFFAT VISITS DR BRUCE—JOHN SMITH MOFFAT BECOMES A PUPIL AT PERCY STREET SCHOOL—1857, DINNER TO DR LIVINGSTONE—1862, HARTLEY PIT CATASTROPHE—RELIGIOUS REVIVAL IN NEWCASTLE—1863, PREACHES AT WHITTINGHAM—1864, RELIGIOUS MEETINGS IN THE CIRCUS—OTHER RELIGIOUS WORK—PREACHES AT KEILDER—1882, PREACHES AT BELLINGHAM AND AT WOOLEY—1886, AT OTTERBURN—ASSISTS AT SERVICES AT KEILDER.

As we have seen from a statement in the first chapter, John Bruce became a member of the Presbyterian congregation worshipping in Clavering Place Chapel, under the ministry of the Rev. James Pringle, and John Collingwood Bruce, with other members of the family, became attached to the same congregation and so continued until May 1851, when matters occurred which gave great pain to the subject of this memoir and caused him to leave the congregation. The Rev. James Pringle, the minister of the chapel, was much esteemed by his congregation and respected by all who knew him. Dr Bruce was warmly attached to him as an old family friend from whom he had received assistance and encouragement during his preparation for the ministry. Mr Pringle had been minister of the congregation since October 1804,

and in 1845, or about that time, it was determined that he should have the assistance of a colleague. The Rev. J. Brown Johnston was ordained to fill this office, but owing to failing health he resigned not many months after his ordination. To fill the vacancy thus created, the Rev. John Clarke Houston was ordained on the 30th of June 1847. Mr Houston was a young Irishman of ability, but possessed of more activity than discretion, and was without any experience in the management of affairs. He had not been the unanimous choice of the congregation, and a coldness arose between him and a number of the members which, as time went on, increased so as to create feelings incompatible with the relationship which ought to exist between a minister and his people. Accordingly it appeared to a large number of the members of the Clavering Place Church that no other course was open to them than to leave the congregation, and on the 28th of April 1851 a petition signed by 120 of the members praying that they might be erected into a separate congregation was presented to the session.

The matter was adjourned from time to time until the 2nd of July. In the meantime an effort was made by Commissioners, appointed by the Synod to act with the Newcastle Presbytery, to devise means of accommodation between the contending parties, but without success. At length, on the 2nd of July, certificates of disjunction were granted to 140 members, of whom Dr Bruce was one. The majority of those persons had since the 5th of May ceased to attend the services at Clavering Place, and there was danger of their losing all connection with the Presbyterian Church.

In these circumstances, pending the delay caused by the proceedings of the Session and in order to afford to the persons who had determined to leave the congregation an opportunity of considering the course they should ultimately pursue, Dr Bruce, as a licensed preacher of the Church, was asked to undertake for a time the duty of conducting Sunday services for the benefit of those who had ceased to attend Clavering Place Chapel.

He considered that the keeping of the people together was a matter of sufficient importance to justify his compliance with this request, and for several weeks he conducted services regularly in a hall hired for the purpose, and so succeeded in preventing those who had left Clavering Place from becoming scattered. This was a great effort to him, considering his heavy week-day duties, but his ministrations were eminently acceptable to the people, and they were successful in their main object. Shortly afterwards nearly the whole body joined the Blackett Street Presbyterian congregation. Dr Bruce's services on this occasion were acknowledged by the presentation to him of a silver teapot bearing the following inscription :—

Presented to the  
REV. J. C. BRUCE, A.M.,  
BY A NUMBER OF  
CHRISTIAN FRIENDS  
IN TESTIMONY OF THEIR  
ESTEEM FOR HIS CHARACTER AND  
GRATITUDE FOR HIS LABOURS.

NEWCASTLE-ON-TYNE,  
11th of Sept. 1851.

The Blackett Street congregation "called" the Rev. Matthew M'Naughton, who was ordained as minister, and he laboured with great acceptance until his death in February 1862. He was succeeded by the Rev. Richard Leitch, M.A., who was ordained minister of the congregation in January 1863, the duties of which office he continues to discharge with conspicuous zeal and ability.

Dr Bruce, who had been ordained an elder at Claving Place, became an active member of the Session of the Blackett Street congregation, and was always ready to exert himself to the utmost to promote the welfare of the Church, alike under the ministry of Mr M'Naughton and Mr Leitch. To both of these ministers he was sincerely attached, and they in turn often sought his advice and always placed confidence in his judgment.<sup>1</sup>

The Rev. Richard Leitch, in a sermon preached by him in Blackett Street Church on the Sunday after Dr Bruce's death, thus alluded to him :—

"To this congregation, of which he was an elder for over forty years, he was ever cordially and closely attached.

"In the poor he took a special interest, being always ready to render pecuniary aid, whilst over the weak and the erring he was ever disposed to throw the mantle of forgiveness and charity.

"Regarding what he was to me during all my ministry, I dare not trust myself to speak.

<sup>1</sup> In 1903 the congregation moved from Blackett Street into a new Church in College Road.

Not a single cloud ever for a moment came across our friendship. I loved him as a father. I felt his friendship was one of the choicest treasures my Heavenly Father has ever bestowed upon me. His home and his heart alike were open to me. I never shall, I never can, forget him, or cease to feel grateful for all he was to me and mine."

On the 3rd of May 1854 Dr Bruce was in London and attended the annual meeting of the Bible Society in the forenoon, and the dinner of the Royal Literary Fund in the evening.

During the Christmas holidays, 1854, Mrs Gainsford was staying in London, and Dr and Mrs Bruce joined her there. The following letter, written by Dr Bruce to his mother on the last day of the year, shows what a strong hold the old associations of Oxendon Chapel had over his mind.

"LONDON, 31st December 1854.

"You will have heard of our movements up to last night. This morning we all went to Oxendon Chapel. The distance is considerable, but the weather was fine so as to admit of our walking. As I approached the old place I seemed to be welcomed by the spirits of the sainted dead. I thought of Bow Lane, of Dr Jerment, of my grandfather and grandmother, of old Mr Marshall and others whom I had met with, but who now are no more. All the glories of St Peter's in Rome did not affect my spirit last year half so much as the entrance into the dark and dingy Oxendon Chapel did this morning. We liked

Dr Archer much; considering the number of years he has officiated in that pulpit, he wears remarkably well. Mrs Archer is much as usual, fidgetting during the time of the service to see that everybody gets a proper place, and chatting to every one at the end. I think of going again in the evening.

"To-morrow I mean to attend the committee meeting at the Bible Society, and after that shall probably go to the library of the Antiquaries at Somerset House."

In June 1855 Dr Bruce's eldest son settled in London, and shortly afterwards entered as a student at the Middle Temple. During his absence from home it was Dr Bruce's habit to write to his son every Sunday on purely religious subjects, with the view of encouraging him in the earnest contemplation of his highest interests. These letters, which contain many pious reflections on questions relating to vital Christianity, are yet of too private and personal a character to admit of publication. In October 1855 a second son was born, who was named John after his paternal grandfather.

In the year 1841 the Rev. Robert Moffat, D.D., the well-known missionary to South Africa, visited Newcastle, and a close friendship sprang up between him and Dr Bruce, who took the warmest interest in the missionary work so bravely carried on by Dr and Mrs Moffat in South Africa under the greatest difficulties. He was much attracted by the noble character of Dr Moffat, by his overflowing enthusiasm and his high Christian character. Dr Moffat was a frequent guest of Dr Bruce, and on these occasions

was generally prevailed upon to address the school and delight the boys with accounts of his adventures.

Dr Moffat printed a hymn-book in the Secuana language; a copy of it was presented by him to Dr Bruce, who wrote on its first page the following memorandum:—

“This hymn-book, if I remember rightly, had its origin at my dinner-table. Dr Moffat had given the boys of my school an account of his labours, and they got up a subscription in aid of them. On the money being given him, he was at a loss about its disposal, the New Testament and the Psalms being already printed; at last the idea struck him that he would start the printing of a small book of hymns and use the money towards that object.”

Before leaving England Dr Moffat gave a copy of the Secuana Testament to Dr Bruce, on which was written this inscription:—

“ROBERT MOFFAT, the translator of this sacred volume, presents it to his highly valued and affectionate friend Mr JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE of Newcastle, and peradventure when he happens to glance at it he may kindly and prayerfully feel for him when he is again engaged among Afric's sable children in spreading the everlasting Gospel.

“NEWCASTLE, *September 29, 1842.*”

An electrical machine, together with a galvanic battery and coil, were presented to Dr Moffat by Dr Bruce and some friends at Newcastle, and in a



letter, dated 10th May 1847, Dr Moffat gave an interesting account of the effect of the electric machine upon the natives. At a feast which was given to the scholars he brought the machine into the schoolroom, but as soon as they heard it was the logarima (lightning) there was a scramble among most of them who should first get out of doors. They, however, soon returned when they found that those who remained were still on their legs. The old people who were present, with eyes raised above the machine, inquired where the cloud was.

After a time he got the natives persuaded to form a circle and take hold of a chain, and he sent a shock from a small Leyden jar through the circle. Most of them fell to the floor, each looking sharply first at one elbow and then at the other. Two or three bolted and thought they had had a narrow escape. Those who kept their feet laughed heartily at the others, and this produced emulation, so that the interest was kept up, and much amusement was occasioned when the electricity was passed through a person standing on a stool with glass legs.

Before Dr Moffat left England it was arranged that his second son, John Smith Moffat, should become a resident pupil in Percy Street Academy, and after Dr Moffat returned to South Africa a long and interesting correspondence was kept up between him and Dr Bruce.

The following extract from a letter, dated Kuruman, 10th January 1853, from Dr Moffat, shows how highly he appreciated the kindness of Dr Bruce to his son.

“When you last wrote in the month of August you referred to the prospects opening up for John.

Since that time we have heard from him once and again. Everything regarding him seems to have been ordered well and far beyond our most sanguine expectations.

"It has also given us real joy to see from the tenor of all John's letters that he is fully able to appreciate kindness, and acknowledge with a heart evidently brimful of gratitude the providence which brought him under your instruction and the parental care of yourself and Mrs Bruce. May our Heavenly Father bless you both a thousandfold."

John Smith Moffat became a missionary in South Africa in 1859, and laboured there for many years. He afterwards became a resident magistrate, and rendered important public service, for which he received the decoration of C.M.G.

Dr Moffat's correspondence with Dr Bruce refers to the difficulties he experienced in translating the books of the Old Testament into the native language, and speaks very strongly of the obstacles which the Boers put in the way of the mission work.

Writing on the 9th June 1855 he says—

"That the Transvaal Boers and the aborigines will live in peace is what we have long ceased to expect."

Dr Moffat's letters give an interesting account of the history of missions in South Africa, but to reproduce them here would lead us away from the immediate object of this memoir.

Dr Bruce's friendship with Dr Moffat led to his acquaintance with Dr Livingstone, a son-in-law of Dr

Moffat. In December 1857 Dr Livingstone dined at the chambers of Mr Gainsford Bruce in Southampton Buildings to meet Dr Bruce. The party was a small one ; it was made up of Dr Livingstone, Dr Bruce, the Rev. Dr Binney, Mr George Barclay Bruce, Mr Wright, a Chancery barrister, and Mr Gainsford Bruce. The absence of all formality delighted Dr Livingstone, who had grown tired of official receptions and public meetings. He threw off all reserve, entering heartily into the enjoyment of the evening, and told the story of the many thrilling incidents of his travels with zest and simplicity. It was a delightful evening. No one seemed to enjoy it more than Dr Livingstone.

One of the most appalling and heartrending catastrophes that has ever occurred in this country took place in the morning of Thursday, the 16th January 1862, in Hartley New Pit, near Seaton Delaval. Over the mouth of the pit was the beam of a pumping engine, the beam weighing about forty tons. Eight men were being drawn up in the cage by means of the winding machine when the beam of the engine broke and fell into the pit, meeting in its downward course the ascending cage with its human cargo. The broken beam struck the top of the brattice with such violence that a mass of wooden and iron framework was hurled into the shaft, thus cutting off all means of escape from the lower portion of the mine, in which were 215 men and boys. As soon as the nature of the accident became known, the pit-mouth was crowded with noble fellows who at once volunteered to render every assistance in their power. Three of the men in the cage were rescued, but although every effort was made to save the rest all attempts to open the mine were unavailing until

the 22nd of January, when an opening was made, but too late to save the lives of any of those who had been imprisoned there.

Dr Bruce was called upon to visit many of the bereaved families, and he was deeply touched by the religious fervour of the working population. He was specially concerned with the case of Thomas Watson, one of the men rescued from the cage, who gave the narrative of his wonderful deliverance at the mid-day prayer meeting at Newcastle. Dr Bruce was so much impressed by the account given by Watson that he published a tract entitled "Thomas Watson's Narrative." The proceeds of its sale were devoted to the benefit of the heroic man whose adventures it related.

The story is too long to be inserted here, but the incidents recorded by Watson afforded striking evidence of the vitality of the religious feeling which filled the minds and hearts of many of the Northumberland miners. He was taken to his house near at hand in an unconscious state and was carefully attended. On coming to himself he recognised his father standing by his side. He said, "Now, father, what a blessed thing religion is; this is the time to try it." Dr Bruce finishes the narrative with these words:—

"In this concluding sentence we have the moral of the whole story. Happy is the country whose population is elevated by the ennobling and sanctifying influences of true religion."

In the year 1862 a religious revival manifested itself in Newcastle, especially among the working men.

The next two letters to his son Gainsford refer to this revival.

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 30th May 1862.

"We have not made any plans for the summer after the examination. Your mother, I, and Johnny will come up to the exhibition, and then your mother and brother will probably go to Brighton. There I think I will leave them and come home to get on with my Roman Wall matters. I must devote myself unremittingly for three or four months to this subject, or I shall fall through it altogether.

"On my return from Durham last night I went to a prayer-meeting held by some men belonging to Hawthorn's factory. Such earnestness (as well as propriety) in prayer I never before witnessed. The young man who presided gave a wonderful address. God in His mercy is hearing prayer for Newcastle."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, June 15, 1862.

"There is a most encouraging awakening taking place just now among some of Hawthorn's factory men. I have met them several times, and last night I had a meeting of about thirty of them to search the Scriptures. Some of them are very noble fellows, with regular Saxon downrightness of character and great shrewdness. I do not know that I ever was more pleased with anything in my life than when a man at the close of our exercises last night said to me, 'I wish you would speak louder next time; I lost a good deal of what you said; I get deaf with being inside the boilers all day.'"

The following is a birthday letter to his eldest son :—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 24th May 1863.

“Most earnestly do I wish you many happy returns of your birthday, and pray that the year on which you have entered may be one of distinguished blessing.

“May God impart His Holy Spirit to you and me, and enable us to glory in the cross of Christ and give ourselves with our whole souls to Him. Then will our peace be as a river. I thank God that He is opening up a way before you in your profession.”

Towards the end of this month Dr Bruce joined the Berwickshire Field Club in an expedition to Dryburgh, Melrose, and the Eildon Hills, and enjoyed the excursion. On his way home he went to Alnwick to examine some inscribed stones in the museum in the Castle. On the last Sunday in May he preached in the neighbourhood of Whittingham on behalf of the Bible Society, and on the 30th he spoke at a meeting at Branton for the same society.

Dr Bruce was frequently called upon by Presbyterian ministers in the North of England to conduct services for them on special occasions. The work involved by complying with these requests was considerable, and sometimes onerous, but he was always ready to devote his strength and energy to the advancement of the Presbyterian cause. The services thus rendered were always gratuitous, and he was much amused when, on one occasion, the collector of income tax found fault with his return because it omitted to notice the profit made by his

preaching engagements. Dr Bruce informed him that not only were his services wholly unpaid for, but in nearly all cases he paid his travelling expenses out of his own pocket.

“Though he did not prosecute the work of the Christian ministry, for which in many respects he was so admirably qualified, yet his love for theological study remained with him throughout life, and his preaching as the years went on became more replete with unction, fervour, and power.”<sup>1</sup>

In January 1864 he took part in some special services which were held in the Circus, Percy Street. The following extract from a letter to his son Gainsford refers to one of these meetings:—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 26th January 1864.

“The meeting in the Circus on Sunday night was, I think, a successful one. There were about 600 people present, chiefly men, and I am told several of them were infidels. I am thankful to say that I was enabled with greater fulness than usual and more comfort than I expected to declare the Gospel to them. I quoted Lord Byron’s testimony in favour of the ‘exalted hope’ of the Christian from Tom Moore’s ‘Life of the Poet.’ I am told that several persons exhibited much feeling. My highest ambition next to salvation of my own soul and of the dear members of my own family is that the Lord may give me seals to my ministry, feeble and fragmentary as it is.

<sup>1</sup> Sermon by the Rev. Richard Leitch, M.A.

"I am pegging away at my inscriptions, only, as I am to preach on Sunday morning for Mr Leitch on the occasion of the anniversary of his ordination, my attention will be rather diverted."

The next letter is one to his wife: it indicates the kind of work he was engaged in at the time.

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, *Feb. 22nd, 1864.*

"I must begin my week's work with a letter to you. This is a desperately cold morning; the thermometer has been down to 25 degrees during the night.

"We had a very nice service yesterday: I never wish to enjoy ministrations of an abler and more profitable character than those of Mr Leitch. In the evening I went to the mission school, far along Scotswood Road. I had a small audience, chiefly consisting of women with babies, and boys; they were, however, exceedingly attentive.

"I called to-day on my way home to dinner upon that poor woman H. R., who used to be portersess at the Home, the mother of six children, and who has been restored to her family. Her husband was out; she was pleased to see me. Since her return home (she could not read before) she has persuaded her husband to set up family worship. They had not a large print Bible, so I took her one; it cost 8s. 6d. I will call upon her from time to time, for she will want all the help we can give her. She lives in a tidy cottage which is their own."



The next letter is to his son Gainsford from Newcastle-upon-Tyne :—

*"5th June 1864.*

"Mr Leitch preached excellently this morning; I felt the discourse to be profitable. I hope you are having a good day. Depend upon it, we are all of us more than half asleep as to eternal realities. Oh, for grace to awake. I hope the highest ambition I have for you is that you may be serviceable to Christ's glorious cause in this world. Search, my dear son, your own heart, and may God by His Spirit help you, and may you be brought to a right conclusion as to your own state before God, and as to the path in which He would have you walk. We must not mind bearing the cross of Christ; we must not mind denying ourselves things that we think lawful if offence is thereby to be avoided. It is time for me to go. Your mother and I will bear you much upon our spirits."

On the 19th September 1864 the new Presbyterian Chapel that had been built by the Duke of Northumberland at Kielder was opened for public worship. The old chapel there, in which for generations the inhabitants of the district had met on the Lord's Day, had fallen into decay, and a new one became necessary. The people of the neighbourhood, chiefly shepherds and their families, were unable to provide funds for a new church. The Duke at his own cost erected a neat Gothic building capable of accommodating 150 persons, and granted the use of the building to the Presbyterian congregation who had

worshipped in the old chapel. Dr Bruce conducted the opening service. Long before the time for the commencement of the service people were seen coming over the hills in all directions, and soon every seat and resting-place in the church were fully occupied by a devout congregation. He took for his text Gen. xxviii. 17: "How dreadful is this place! this is none other but the house of God, and this is the gate of heaven." Dr Bruce, writing home, said: "Yesterday we had a grand day, the chapel crammed."

The following letters refer to religious and philanthropic work:—

(To his Wife.)

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 10th November 1865.

"We are having beautiful weather here, but cold. We had a capital prayer-meeting yesterday; a good attendance, the address all to the point, nothing amiss or tedious; I am so glad. I was lazy yesterday evening, so I took it easy; to-day I am tolerably brisk, and mean to wipe off my arrears of letters. I have accepted an invitation to attend a Bible-meeting at Chester-le-Street next Wednesday, and of the Sunderland Town Mission on Tuesday the 21st. One must try to do something to help on the glorious cause."

(To his Son Gainsford.)

"NEWCASTLE, 21st Nov. 1865.

"We are having a spiritual awakening here at present. The prayer-meeting to-day was of no ordinary character. To-morrow evening there is

to be a meeting in our lecture-room of those who have recently been awakened: as far as I can judge, it will be an extraordinary meeting. Some of the young converts were at our prayer-meeting to-day, and I never saw faces *shine* so. May you and I partake of this blessing."

On the 23rd September 1882 the ceremony took place of laying the foundation-stone of a new Presbyterian church at Bellingham by Mr George Barclay Bruce.

The church had been founded in 1804, and in the course of time the old building became inadequate for the accommodation of the congregation assembling there, and it was now necessary to provide a new building. Dr Bruce attended the laying of the foundation-stone, and gave an address of which the following is an abstract:—

"Were it not for the Bible and the teaching of the Bible we who stand around this foundation-stone might be occupying those heights upon the hills, living in those stone wigwams which our ancestors 2000 years ago occupied.

"This, I doubt not, will be the birthplace of many souls—souls born for eternity. Speaking of the earthly temple, I can't help thinking of that temple which the great Head of the Church is now building. He is its foundation-stone, and is forming its walls of living stones—precious Christian souls. We mourn over our temporary division, but Christ looks upon His Church as being one, and every living Christian is part and parcel of that glorious temple which he inhabits.

“God dwells in us, and His power and His grace should be manifested through us. We are all kings and priests to minister to the Most High God. Let us see that we do it. Let us see that we offer up the incense of praise and prayer. When you are laying your own desires before God, never forget the minister who labours here. Now we are occupying the outer courts of the temple. The time will come, very soon to some of us, when the veil separating us from the Holy of Holies will be drawn aside, and one and another of us shall be admitted into the immediate presence of Jehovah. Then we shall see the King in His beauty. In the prospect of that great and glorious event let us do what we can while we are in this world to help on Christ’s glorious cause, and to urge our fellow sinners to come to the Saviour; and right joyous will it be if through infinite mercy and grace we are permitted, when we get within the gates of pearl, to meet with some there whom by God’s grace we have helped into the right way.”

A meeting of the Presbytery was held at Wooler on the 28th of November 1882, to celebrate the fiftieth anniversary of the ministry of the Rev. J. L. Muirhead. His colleague, the Rev. James Gray, wrote to Dr Bruce to ask him to conduct the service on the previous Sunday. In his letter he says—

“To conduct the service we should like one whose fame is in all the Churches, and one whose years are somewhat more than the half century.

“I now write to you to ask you to do us this

great kindness. Your name is so familiar throughout Northumberland that we have only to get your permission to advertise it to ensure a very good attendance."

Dr Bruce accepted the invitation and conducted the special services.

The preaching station at Otterburn, which had been opened by Dr Bruce in August 1830, had developed into an important and flourishing congregation. The chapel in which they worshipped had become too small for their accommodation, and a new church was built, at the opening of which, in January 1886, Dr Bruce preached. The occasion was for him especially interesting and solemn, and before beginning the sermon he made feeling reference to the early history of the congregation and to the part he had taken in its formation more than half a century before. It was always a pleasure to him to take part in the services of the Presbyterian churches situated in the remote districts of Northumberland: he was attracted by the simple manners of the people, and by their earnestness in upholding under difficulties the ordinances of their Church.

Kielder was a district to which he was particularly attached, situated as it was among the Border hills, and when in April 1886 he was asked to spend a Sunday there, to assist at the Communion, he gladly accepted the invitation; nor did he allow the inclement weather which prevailed at the time to prevent his keeping his engagement.

## CHAPTER XIV.

1850, SPEECH AT PUBLIC MEETING CALLED TO CONSIDER THE OPENING OF NEWCASTLE POST-OFFICE ON SUNDAY—1854, LECTURE ON LOCAL MEMORIALS OF GEORGE STEPHENSON—1855, SPEECH AT MECHANICS' INSTITUTE, NEWCASTLE—MARY MAGDALENE HOSPITAL—CHARTER OF KING JAMES I.—ACT OF PARLIAMENT AUTHORISING THE PULLING DOWN OF CHAPEL ON BRIDGE AND BUILDING NEW CHAPEL AT BARRAS BRIDGE—1826, THE REV. RICHARD CLAYTON APPOINTED MASTER—1856, HIS DEATH—EFFORTS MADE BY TOWNSPEOPLE FOR THE REORGANISATION OF THE CHARITY—CORPORATION APPOINT THE VICAR TO THE MASTERSHIP—PUBLIC MEETING TO PROTEST—SPEECH BY DR BRUCE—INQUIRY BY CHARITY COMMISSIONERS—PROCEEDINGS CARRIED ON FOR ELEVEN YEARS—1861, CLAYTON MEMORIAL CHURCH—CHARITY REORGANISED—1874, SPEECH AT ALNWICK MECHANICS' INSTITUTE—1878, ELECTED GUARDIAN OF THE POOR—1879, OPENING OF INDUSTRIAL DWELLINGS—1881, PRESIDES AT MEETING IN SUPPORT OF VILLAGE HOMES.

In the summer of 1850 the Postmaster-General made an order closing Newcastle post-office on Sunday. A number of the merchants and other leading people of the town signed a requisition to the Mayor to call a public meeting for the purpose of considering the propriety of petitioning Parliament to reopen Newcastle post-office on Sunday. A meeting called by the Mayor was held on Monday, 1st July, at noon in the Guild Hall. It was considered right by a number of the inhabitants of the town to support the action of the Postmaster-General, and to endeavour to secure rest for the men employed in the post-office as far as

possible on Sunday. When it was known by those who signed the requisition that their proposal was to be opposed, much interest was excited. A small knot of influential persons had been accustomed to manage the affairs of the town, and it was seldom that measures proposed by them were thwarted or even questioned. A good deal of curiosity was therefore aroused on the present occasion respecting the character of the opposition. The meeting was very numerously attended, and, according to the 'Newcastle Guardian' of 6th July, it

"included most of the leading bankers, merchants, manufacturers, and shipowners of the town and immediate district, with several of the clergy and ministers of various denominations."

Numbers of the working classes were also present. Dr Headlam, the Nestor of the Whig party, moved the first resolution, which was, "That the recent change in the post-office regulations is inconvenient to the public." Mr Christian Allhusen seconded the resolution. Dr Bruce then rose and moved an amendment:—

"That this meeting petition Parliament to continue the present postal arrangements for the Sunday." He said that it was with extreme reluctance that he obtruded himself upon the meeting. He had never before taken part in a meeting of a political character, nor of a religious character if it had also a political aspect. It was not pleasant to stand up and oppose the wishes of any of his fellow-townsmen, but he felt compelled to do so on the present occasion. It

was very difficult to speak on the subject, because he entirely concurred in the opinion already expressed, that though a theological subject, yet it ought not so to be discussed. He could not, therefore, support his position on the grounds most conclusive to himself, but it had been argued as a common-sense question, and he did not fear to meet any man on that ground.

He then proceeded to point out that man requires one day of rest in seven to have fellowship with higher and holier things than he meets with in his six days' intercourse with the world. It was inconsistent for men who talked about toleration and liberty to say to the hard-working post-office clerks that they should not have rest on Sunday. He admitted there were cases in which necessity and mercy would sanction the delivery of letters on Sunday, but he maintained that such cases were comparatively few, and they ought not on account of a few chance occasions systematically to deny Sunday rest to a large body of their fellow-subjects. He said the merchants and business men of London could do without their letters on Sunday, and so long as the post-office in London was closed on Sunday it was idle for the merchants of Newcastle to allege that the closing of the post-office on Sunday prejudicially affected their business. The post-office was an admirable institution, and he would cherish the men who worked it. England had long held up her head in the midst of the nations, and he could not help connecting this fact with the other, that England was distinguished among the nations for



the respect which she paid to the observance of Sunday.

The Rev. Richard Clayton seconded the amendment. Many other speakers followed, and at the end of a very excited debate the Mayor put the amendment and declared there was a majority against it. The motion was then put and carried. Sir John Fife moved a second resolution—

“That this meeting is of opinion that it is the duty of Government to afford the community at large every reasonable facility for the transmission of letters and newspapers as heretofore on Sunday.”

This resolution was seconded by Mr N. G. Lambert, and was carried without opposition.

Although Dr Bruce and those who acted with him were not successful in carrying the amendment, they felt satisfied that their protest was not without effect, and hoped that in time public opinion would support their action.

In 1854 he delivered before the Literary and Philosophical Society a lecture on the Local Memorials of George Stephenson, the engineer. He had known him personally, and had visited him in his cottage at Killingworth, and he took some pains to collect, from men who had been intimate with the great engineer, particulars of his early life. In this way he was able to gather a considerable store of information respecting his character and habits, and he related a number of anecdotes which gave interest to the lecture.

On October 31, 1855, an important meeting was held at the Mechanics' Institute, Newcastle. Earl

Grey was in the chair, and Dr Bruce made a speech on the necessity of offering to the working mechanic opportunities of a higher education. The following is a report of a portion of the speech :—

“ Whilst our population has been increasing so rapidly, the means of their mental and moral and religious training has not maintained an equal ratio. The necessary consequence is, that large numbers of our population are exposed to the evils of ignorance and the absence of moral restraint.

“ The rising artisan demands instruction, and it is for the interest of society that the demand should be supplied. Let schools be founded, let libraries be established, let lectures be freely given. I would lay stress upon the latter mode of instruction. The well-educated man cares comparatively little for lectures. By the aid of his library he can at home work out most subjects for himself. This is not the case with the most of those who have been early set to labour. They know not how to set to work in the study of a subject, nor what books to select.

“ After a hard day's work they listen to a lecture. It costs them little trouble to do so. They are interested ; a string has been touched which ceases not for days and months to vibrate, the authors which were mentioned are consulted, and a field of delightful and successful investigation opens upon the mind of the explorer of which he knew nothing before he strolled into the lecture-room.

“ But it is not simply as a means of elaborating

artistic skill that I would advocate the more extensive diffusion of the higher kinds of learning, but in order that our labouring population may be the better fitted for becoming good members of society. A man who has had a very limited education, on whom society makes few demands, finds himself put into offices of responsibility and influence, and withal has large wages. Is not that man apt to suppose that he is as capable of judging of other things as of those pertaining to his own trade—of politics and religion as well as of soda or glass or axles? He is without refined taste, and without the moral restraints which, in a Christian country, are imposed upon the middle and upper classes. He is apt to seek relaxation in the grosser propensities of our nature, and his wages, exceeding the income of many tradesmen of the middle class, the merchant's clerk, or even the curate of the parish, enable him to do so without restraint. In order that you may let him know his own relative value in the scale of society, you must instruct him; in order that you may refine his taste and withdraw him from evil influences, you must instruct him; in order that you may develop all his capacities for usefulness, you must instruct him. The skilled working man now more than ever knows his power, and that he may use it for good and not for evil, you must instruct him."

In the autumn of the year 1856 the town was thrown into a ferment. There existed in Newcastle an old charity, the Hospital of St Mary Magdalene, and a chapel near the north end of Tyne Bridge dedi-

cated to St Thomas à Becket. Although the chapel may have been originally an independent foundation, it had become connected with the hospital. Of the origin of the foundation of the hospital and chapel very little is known, but the hospital was believed to have been founded by some unknown donor for the benefit of lepers.

King James I. granted a charter by which it was declared that the hospital should be composed of a master, who should be at least a master of arts, and three brethren, who should be free burgesses of the town of Newcastle, in the same hospital to be supported.

The charter constituted the master and brethren a body corporate, and provided if the master should die, then the Mayor and Council of the town should appoint some other fit person in his place: it contained a grant to the master and brethren of the hospital premises and of the chapel on the bridge of Tyne, and of all lands and tenements to the hospital or chapel belonging.

In the year 1808 Dr Henry Ridley, who was then master, appointed the Rev. Robert Wasney to conduct the services in the Bridge-end Chapel. Mr Wasney was a preacher of exceptional gifts and intense earnestness, and his appointment produced striking results.

Soon after his appointment the old chapel on the bridge proved quite inadequate to accommodate the people who flocked to hear him. The old building about the same time was found to be an obstruction to the increasing traffic across the bridge, and it was arranged that the Corporation should purchase the chapel and pull it down, and that a new chapel for

public worship should be erected on land belonging to the charity at Barras Bridge. This arrangement was finally carried out pursuant to the provisions of an Act of Parliament which obtained the Royal assent on the 21st June 1827. On the 26th July 1826 the Rev. Richard Clayton was appointed master. Mr Clayton entered with the energy of youth into the new scheme, having the assistance of Mr Wasney as curate.

The Act of Parliament required that the money which had arisen from the sale of the ancient chapel and certain other moneys in the Act mentioned should be expended in erecting on land at the Barras Bridge a chapel for the performance of divine worship according to the liturgy and doctrines of the Established Church of England. The Act further provided that the master and brethren of the hospital should, after the consecration of the said chapel and thenceforth for ever, cause divine service to be performed in the said chapel either by the master for the time being of the hospital or by a sufficient chaplain to be appointed by him, being a clergyman of the Church of England in priest's or deacon's orders, twice on every Sunday throughout the year.

The new chapel on the Barras Bridge site was completed and consecrated in 1830. With the completion of St Thomas's a new impulse was given to church-life in Newcastle. Mr Clayton<sup>1</sup> occupied a position of great influence and was highly respected in the town. The congregation which he attracted to St Thomas's was very large, and consisted of a

<sup>1</sup> See the notice of the Rev. Richard Clayton in 'Men of Mark 'twixt Tyne and Tweed,' from which some of these particulars have been gleaned.

number of influential persons. He held evangelical views, and was looked upon by the evangelical party in the town as the leader of their school of thought. He took an active part in the management of religious and philanthropic schemes in the town in which churchmen and dissenters were able to co-operate. Thus there grew up around him a large body of devoted friends both within and without the church, who followed his lead in schemes of local benevolence.

On the 8th October Mr Clayton died after a short illness.

The congregation of St Thomas's was exceedingly anxious that a clergyman should be appointed to the vacant mastership who was of the same school of religious thought as Mr Clayton, and there was a large body of persons in the town, not members of the congregation, who sympathised with them in their wishes.

The Town Council had, as we have seen by the terms of the charter, the patronage of the mastership. The Rev. Clement Moody was at this time vicar of Newcastle. The emoluments of the vicarage were inadequate to the position held by the vicar. It occurred to some of the leading members of the Corporation that, instead of setting on foot a subscription to increase the endowment of the vicarage, the vicar's income might be increased by appointing him to the vacant mastership of the hospital. As there was no cure-of-souls attached to the chapel of St Thomas, there was nothing in law to prevent the vicar of Newcastle holding the office of master. But Mr Moody, although he was a courteous, scholarly gentleman, was not a person acceptable to the con-

gregation worshipping at St Thomas's Chapel, and it was obvious that a clergyman who had care of a large and important parish such as St Nicholas could give little time and attention to meet the wants of the congregation of St Thomas's. The scheme, besides, involving this double appointment, although it did not involve a plurality of cures, savoured of plurality, and a vehement opposition was raised by the congregation of St Thomas's and by a large party in the town to the proposal to appoint the vicar as master. Moreover, it was considered by many in the town that the time had arrived when the charity should be reorganised, and that a new scheme should be obtained for the management of its funds in order that its benefits should be extended beyond the narrow body of a master and three brethren.

On the 14th of October, six days after Mr Clayton's death, a meeting of the Town Council was held, at which it was resolved that the Council should adjourn until Wednesday the 29th inst., and that the office of master of the hospital should then be filled up. At the meeting of the Council held on the 29th of October various deputations presented memorials suggesting that the vacancy occasioned by the death of the late master furnished a favourable opportunity of devising and carrying into effect some plan by which the charities of St Thomas and St Mary Magdalene could be administered more in harmony with the intentions of the founders and with the interests of the great body of the people.

At the same meeting a letter was read from the secretary of the Charity Commission, addressed to the town clerk, stating that the Board had deter-

mined to institute an immediate inquiry by one of their inspectors into the whole circumstances of the charity, and the secretary was directed to intimate to the town clerk the recommendation of the Board, that in the meantime the existing vacancy should not be filled up.

At the same meeting an application for the office of master by the Rev. Clement Moody, vicar of Newcastle, was read, in which he stated that if he should be honoured with a majority of the suffrages of the Council he would be ready to assent to such alterations in the constitution of the hospital, and in the emoluments of the master and brethren, as might be adopted with a view of rendering the hospital more generally useful in the town. He said that his intention was, if elected, to appoint a chaplain and an assistant chaplain to conduct the services at St Thomas's Chapel.

At this meeting the committee on schools, charities, and hospitals presented a report. From their report it appeared that the gross rental derived by the charity from houses, lands, and minerals amounted to £1700 a-year, and the pews of the chapel let for £109 a-year.

It was moved that the report be referred back to the committee for the purpose of enabling them to prepare recommendations for the more beneficial application of the property of the hospital. To that resolution an amendment was moved that the Rev. Clement Moody, M.A., be appointed master of the hospital of St Mary Magdalene with St Thomas's Chapel annexed, and that the grant of the said office be now sealed. There was then a motion for the adjournment of the Council, which was negatived.



There were other amendments moved, but that in favour of the Rev. C. Moody was carried on a division by 27 to 22 votes.

The action of the Town Council in making this appointment in such precipitate haste, in disregard of the expressed opinion of the Charity Commission and of the wishes of the congregation and of a large body of the inhabitants of the town, created an extraordinary ferment, and it was determined by many of the most influential inhabitants to take immediate steps to have the charity organised upon a new basis.

Dr Bruce, who had strong sympathy with the evangelical party in the church and had enjoyed the friendship of Mr Richard Clayton, felt very strongly upon the matter, and although he had no small personal regard for Mr Moody and for many of the members of the Town Council who were active in promoting the new appointment, he did not hesitate to give public expression to his views.

On the 28th November 1856, at a public meeting held in the Lecture-Room in Newcastle, Dr Bruce delivered a very forcible speech condemnatory of the conduct of the Town Council in hastily appointing the Vicar of Newcastle to the vacant mastership without affording any opportunity for an inquiry into the revenue and management of the charity. This speech excited marked attention at the time and had a powerful effect. It illustrated the courage and determination of Dr Bruce in upholding, regardless of personal inconvenience, principles which he believed to be just, and was characterised by Dr Newton as "a speech made in a manly and mag-

nificent way: every word Dr Bruce uttered was responded to by the pulse of the people."

The effect produced can best be judged of by the violence of the language used in the Town Council towards Dr Bruce at a meeting specially summoned to deal with the matter. He wrote to his son Gainsford with reference to the attacks on him—

"At present I am not conscious of having gone out of the path of duty. I think I have been honoured to help forward a glorious cause, the cause of God in my native town. So far as I can at present see, I would wish you to follow in my footsteps."

It is satisfactory to note that the protest made by Dr Bruce and his friends was not altogether in vain. Ultimately, after a long delay the charity was re-organised on a satisfactory basis; the congregation worshipping in St Thomas's Chapel provided themselves with another church and a minister more in sympathy with their views.

In December 1856 Mr Martin, the inspector appointed by the Charity Commission, held the promised inquiry, and on the 8th May 1857 the scheme proposed by the Charity Commissioners was printed and circulated, but no effective steps were taken until the 3rd of October 1860, when the Council resolved that it was expedient to apply to Parliament for an Act to alter and amend the charter of the hospital and chapel, and steps were taken accordingly.

The matter was again brought before the Council on the 4th of December 1861 and on the 22nd of January 1862. At last, on the 12th of April 1867,

an Act providing for the management, improvement, and better government of the Charity of St Mary Magdalene received the Royal assent, and came into operation on the 2nd of February 1868.

The Council that in 1856 was in such haste to fill up the vacant place of the master took nearly eleven years to obtain an improved scheme for the management of the hospital.

The new Act provided that instead of three brethren there should be sixteen, that there should be paid to the master the yearly sum of £500, that every master thereafter to be elected who should at the time of his election hold any benefice having any cure-of-souls annexed thereto should relinquish the same within six months next after his election, and should not during his mastership accept any such benefice. The Act further provided that the Council should provide out of the hospital estate a dwelling-house for the permanent residence of the master, and should erect a hospital at a convenient distance from the chapel to be occupied by the brethren as a place of residence, and that the brethren should be constantly resident in the hospital when the building for that purpose should be erected, and that they should receive in money from the Council the weekly amount of 10s. each for their support.

The congregation of St Thomas's could not wait for the dilatory proceedings of the Council, and immediately after the appointment of the Rev. Clement Moody as master, a subscription was set on foot to erect a new church, to be called the Clayton Memorial Church. The building rapidly progressed, and the church was consecrated on the 14th of

January 1861, and is now known as Jesmond Church. Over the vestry door is the following inscription :—

“This Church, consecrated to the glory of God 14th Jan. 1861, was erected to the memory of the Rev. Richard Clayton, M.A., who was for thirty years Master of the Hospital of St Mary Magdalene and the faithful Minister of St Thomas’s Church, Newcastle-upon-Tyne. He died the 8th of October 1856, aged 54 years.”

In November 1874 an Exhibition of Works of Art was organised to celebrate the 50th anniversary of the Alnwick Mechanics’ Institute. On the 3rd November it was formally opened by his Grace the Duke of Northumberland, who in his address spoke of the importance of providing recreation for mechanics at once wholesome and invigorating, in lieu of that which was stimulating and exhausting. Dr Bruce spoke on the subject of “Science and Religion.”

On the following night, the 4th November, another meeting was held, Lord Percy in the chair.

The Chairman’s address dealt with the imaginative faculty in connection with art.

Dr Bruce spoke on the subject of “The Roman Occupation of Northumberland and Cumberland,” and illustrated his remarks by objects of interest from the museum of the Castle. In commenting upon an altar with an inscription, that it was erected owing to a soldier being warned in a dream, he gave illustrations of the influence which dreams had exercised on human action, and told the following anecdote on the authority of Dr Wilson of Toronto :—

“When as yet our possessions in Canada were comparatively small, the chieftain of a powerful

Red Indian tribe watched the commander of the British forces as he unpacked a bale of goods he had just received from home. A new suit of regimentals, with its bright red cloth and gold facings, greatly attracted the admiration of the Indian. He said nothing that day, but next morning he visited the colonel and said, 'Colonel, I dreamt last night you made me a present of that suit of regimentals.' The colonel felt obliged to bow to the superstitious feelings of his powerful neighbour, and gave up the suit which he would gladly have retained. He, however, in his own mind vowed revenge. Next morning he paid his respects to the red chief and said, 'O chief, I dreamt last night that you gave me all the land between these two rivers'—a point of strategical importance. The chief, bound by his own superstitious views, was obliged to give up the land in question, but he said, 'O colonel, you dream too hard,—you must dream no more.'"

Mr James Hall, a prosperous merchant in Newcastle, and a well-known philanthropist, came to the conclusion that the need of good, healthful, and comfortable dwellings was felt in Newcastle as well as in other large towns, and in April 1869 he sent out a circular proposing to form an Industrial Dwellings Co., Ltd., for providing the industrial classes with healthy and comfortable homes. His appeal resulted in a hearty response from the leading men of business in the city, and at a public meeting, held on the 2nd June 1869 under the presidency of the Mayor, Dr Bruce supported the enterprise. The company was duly registered, and the first

block of the new buildings was opened in September 1870 by the Mayor. A deputation from the Social Science Congress, then holding its sittings in Newcastle, attended the ceremony. An extension of the buildings took place in 1878, and occupied all the land which had been purchased by the company.

The opening of the completed buildings took place on June 3, 1879. Dr Bruce was present, and spoke in favour of the enterprise. He alluded to the difficulty which a working man with a family, and having only £1 or £1, 5s. a-week as wages, had in finding a decent home for his wife and children. "Rookeries," he said, "had been pulled down, but little provision had been made for the poor who had been dislodged, thus rendering the "rookeries" which remain more densely packed, and in consequence more unhealthy." He moved a resolution to the effect that the undertaking was entitled to the support of all persons interested in the welfare of the working classes, which was seconded by Mr Glover, and carried unanimously.

Dr Bruce took an interest in the company and was appointed a director, and up to the time of his death took an active part in its management.

In the spring of 1878 Dr Bruce was elected a guardian of the poor for the parish of All Saints. The first meeting of the Board of Guardians which he attended was held on the 26th April 1878, and from that time until shortly before his death in 1892 he continued a member of the Board, and took an active interest in its business. He made one or two visits to the sick wards of the Infirmary, and heard from the patients themselves their tale of woe, and made very careful notes of the cases he visited. At

one time he intended to move a resolution calling for an inquiry into the management of the sick wards, but upon consideration he came to the conclusion that the state of his health and the number of his other engagements rendered it impracticable for him to devote the time and attention necessary to obtain and arrange the facts required to justify and support such a procedure. He made an effort, as we have already stated, to obtain leave for the ladies of the Infirmary singing band to sing in the sick wards of the hospital, but in that he was unsuccessful; and as he found himself on many points out of sympathy with the majority of the guardians, he felt obliged to confine himself to the routine business of the Board.

An institution called the *Northumberland Village Homes*, for the reception of homeless and destitute girls, had been established at Whitley on the model of the *Princess Mary's Village Homes* at Addlestone, Surrey. The Duke of Northumberland had given a valuable site, and had intimated his intention of giving more land as might be required. Mr James and Mr John Hall had built one block of buildings, Mr Richard Donkin had built the second block, and in January 1881 the first block was in full operation. The first annual meeting was held at Whitley on 26th July 1881, under the presidency of Dr Bruce, who said in opening the proceedings

that this was the first anniversary meeting of an institution somewhat novel in its character, and one of vast importance in its results. He had inquired a little into the history of some of the girls in the Home, and if his hearers

knew what this was they would rejoice exceedingly that they had been rescued from the misery, and probably from the vice, to which they were exposed.

After giving instances in which children had been rescued from terrible surroundings by means of the Homes, he said

that when large numbers of children were brought up together and rendered happy by the outward machinery at work, it was of importance that they should know something of the affection that abounds in a family. This they learned in the Homes which were provided here, and it was not intended when the houses were multiplied that they should form one great sisterly roof, but rather that each home should be separate, having its own mother and its own family.

An institution like this demands the support of all who are more fortunately situated, and it became them to do what they could to smoothen the paths of those whose parents were taken from them by God's providence, or who were rendered worse than useless by the vice to which they had addicted themselves. The young people sheltered in the Homes by-and-by would grow up to be women,—most likely become mothers of families: this being the case, it was of the utmost importance that the principles instilled into their minds should be those that should guide them through life. He was pleased to see that they were made familiar with the Scriptures. They had family worship every



morning, and attended the parish school, where religious instruction was imparted in accordance with the doctrine and articles of the Church of England.

He felt anxious that their religious training should be such that, with God's blessing, it might shield them in a world of temptation and sin. From what he had seen that day he felt sure their meeting would result in the uprearing of two or three more blocks of buildings.

## CHAPTER XV.

1856, ADDRESS BY DR BRUCE IN EDINBURGH—1857, HE VISITS NORMANDY WITH SUSSEX ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIETY—ATTENDS DINNER TO MR GEORGE B. BRUCE—1858, LECTURE ON TRAJAN'S COLUMN—1863, HANDBOOK TO NEWCASTLE—UNDERTAKES TO PREPARE BOOK ON CONCENTRIC CIRCLES—COMMENCES CATALOGUE OF BRITISH ANTIQUITIES AT ALNWICK CASTLE—1868-1872, LETTERS TO HIS WIFE—1869, COMPLETION OF BOOK ON CONCENTRIC CIRCLES—1877-1888, LETTERS TO HIS SON—1881, CATALOGUE OF ALNWICK MUSEUM PRINTED.

IN July 1856 the Annual Meeting of the Archæological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland was held in Edinburgh under the presidency of Lord Talbot de Malahide. Dr Bruce was invited to give an address on the practical advantages accruing from the study of archæology. At that time public feeling was highly excited by the notorious mismanagement of the Crimean War—especially with the defects of the Commissariat Department; and Dr Bruce's lecture, which was delivered on 23rd July 1856, and was of a popular character, and mainly based upon well-known examples taken from ancient history, struck a note which touched a readily responsive chord in public feeling, and was received with rapturous applause. The newspapers of the day were full of it, and extracts from the lecture found their way into journals published in all parts of

the kingdom. Some passages from the lecture are inserted here.

“Utilitarians tell us that they have too much to do with the stern realities of life to dream over the events of the past. Let us see, however, if the study of antiquities has not some solid, tangible, commercial advantages. In the attempt to show that it has, I shall confine myself to one branch of the subject, and will direct your attention to the Roman division of the great field cultivated by the Archæological Institute and other kindred societies. If any one had said to the Prime Minister of England, when he declared war against Russia, ‘My Lord, let me advise you, before you take a single step in the prosecution of this momentous enterprise, to spend at least one week in the study of Roman antiquities,’ what would have been thought of him? And yet, if we look into it, the suggestion is not so supremely ridiculous as at first sight appears. Supposing Lord Aberdeen had come into Northumberland and had placed himself under the guidance of our local Society. The first thing, probably, that we should have done would have been to have shown him the Watling Street and some other lines of Roman roads which there exist in a state of considerable perfection. We should have said to him, ‘You see here the practice of the Romans. In advancing upon an enemy they uniformly made the construction of a road keep pace with the progress of the army. This they did in order to keep up

the communication with their reserves in the rear, that their supplies might be duly forwarded, and that, in the case of sudden disaster, they might make good their retreat. Unfortunately, however, the Prime Minister of that day was too busy to study antiquities. It was not until after our army had suffered the severest calamities that a road was made from Balaklava to the camp.

“Again, we should probably after this have taken him to some of our Roman stations on the Wall and shown him the care with which a Roman army intrenched itself when it rested even for a night. We should have confirmed this opinion by referring him to the sculptures on Trajan’s Column, which represent the soldiers employed in the Dacian campaign as being very extensively employed in building stone dwellings. We should then have pressed upon his Lordship the necessity of securing strong and warm habitations for the army the moment that they had reached the ground which they were to occupy even for a moderate length of time. Our soldiery were exposed on the heights of Sebastopol in a way that a Roman army never would have been. Further, we should probably have drawn his attention very particularly to the Roman method of heating their apartments by hypocausts, and we should have suggested to him the adoption of a similar method of enabling the army to endure the rigours of a Crimean winter. But there was not time to study antiquities, and our army was left to bear up

against the extreme rigours of winter as best they could.

“As to the commissariat of the Roman army, our stations on the lines of the walls of Hadrian and Antoninus do not teach us much; but the instructive coil around the column of Trajan makes up for the deficiency. We should have called his Lordship’s attention to the important fact that foremost in the preparations which Trajan is there represented as making for his campaign in Dacia is laying in a store of hay for his horses. Doubtless if the horses were cared for the men would not be neglected. But our rulers had no time to throw away upon the study of antiquities, and our noble horses were left on the heights above Sebastopol, at a temperature not much above zero, to eat one another’s manes and tails.

“After this country had suffered two or three times from that dreadful scourge, the Asiatic cholera, our rulers were taught the necessity of attending to the sewage of towns and of prohibiting intramural interments. If they had studied antiquities, and had profited by the experience of the Romans, that dreadful infliction, so far as it is dependent upon second causes, might in a great measure have been avoided. The most perfect Roman station that I have had an opportunity of examining is Bremenium, the modern High Rochester. On excavating the station we found that it had been rebuilt on two different occasions; but below the lowest foundation were carefully con-

structed channels—some, as we supposed, for carrying off the waste water, others for introducing the pure stream. I need not refer to the Cloaca Maxima at Rome. With reference to extramural interments, we have abundant evidence in the stations in the north of England to show that the law of the twelve tables upon this subject was strictly observed in barbarous Britain in the second century, whatever may have been the case in more enlightened times.

“I have selected a few facts for the satisfaction of a very numerous class of persons who make too indiscriminate a use of the question, ‘Cui bono?’ Perhaps I ought to apologise to the instructed antiquary for the low ground I have taken,—for having attempted to view his exalted science from behind the counter, as it were. I am well aware that I might have taken a very different stand. Archæology is the handmaid of history. It supplies many of the facts with which the historian deals. But archæology is not simply valuable as a purveyor of facts for the use of the historian. It elevates the mind of man; it enlarges his soul; it divests us of a part of our selfishness; it lifts us out of the rut of our everyday life; it makes our hearts beat in sympathy with those who cannot repay us even the ‘tribute of a sigh.’”

The following letter from his friend Mr Buchanan is one of many which Dr Bruce received on the subject of the lecture:—

“GLASGOW, 25th July 1856.

“I read your paper in the ‘Evening Courant’ with much interest ‘On the use of Archæology.’

It is capital. What a glorious affair it would have been if Hadrian and Sir Colin Campbell had been fated to command in the Crimea!"

In the summer holidays of 1857 Dr Bruce joined an excursion to Normandy organised by the Sussex Archæological Society. The party left London on Monday, June 22. The following letters give an account of his journey:—

(To his Wife.)

"ROUEN, 22nd June 1857.

"Here I am, after a hard day's work, making ready for bed. On Saturday night Gainsford and I went to see Kean's 'Richard II.' I am glad I saw it, but after all it did not strike me as being much worth. In abstaining from theatrical exhibitions, even in their best form, we lose little or nothing. This morning I breakfasted at four o'clock and was off to the station shortly after five. We had a smooth passage to Havre; I got some cold beef on board the ship for lunch, being almost faint from hunger. At Havre the Abbé Coché met us and showed us the lions: he expressed himself much delighted at meeting me, being well acquainted with my works. The people of Newcastle would have been much amused could they have seen me and the Abbé, in his distinctive dress, walking arm-in-arm together through the streets. We reached the hotel here at eight o'clock, and soon got dinner. We were desperately hungry, and greatly enjoyed our refec- tion. Our party is twenty-four in number."

(To his Wife.)

"LONDON, 27th June 1857.

"Here I am seated once again in Gainsford's comfortable chambers. I am too tired to give you an account of all I have seen and done: allow me to say in brief that the whole excursion has been a very agreeable one. The tapestry was a decided attraction, and gave quite a zest to the whole expedition. I discoursed upon it for more than an hour. We left Caen yesterday (Friday) at about 12 o'clock, and got to Havre at 3. I stayed in Havre until 11 at night, when I sailed for Southampton. I arrived here at 11 o'clock, too late for any of the day trains, so must just travel at night."

In December 1857 Dr Bruce had the satisfaction of attending a complimentary dinner given to his brother, Mr Geo. Barclay Bruce (now Sir Geo. B. Bruce), on the occasion of his retirement from the office of chief Engineer of the Madras Railway Company. At the dinner an address and a service of plate of the value of more than £500 were presented to him on behalf of the officers and servants of the Company.

Mr Robert Stephenson, M.P., who presided at the dinner, spoke in felicitous terms of the admirable manner in which he had carried out important engineering works in India under difficulties which attended the inauguration of all such work by native labour in a country such as India. Dr Bruce was highly gratified at the splendid testimony which was borne to the character of his brother, in whose welfare he had taken so great an interest. Writing to Mrs Bruce



on the following day, he said: "George's dinner passed off admirably; everybody seemed pleased."

In February 1858 Dr Bruce delivered before the Literary and Philosophical Society two lectures on Trajan's Column. The lectures were illustrated by elaborate drawings of the sculptures on the spiral band which encircles the column from the base to the capital, depicting the story of Trajan's campaigns in Dacia. There were also exhibited by the lecturer photographs and plaster-casts of the sculptures on the column. The sculptures represent a complete history of the Dacian campaigns, including the representations of the preparations for the campaign, the gathering and transport of forage, and the transport of troops. The lectures were rendered interesting by reason of the skilful manner in which the lecturer contrasted ancient circumstances with modern parallels. He pointed out a remarkable similarity between the bridge built by Trajan over the Danube with the timber arches of the railway viaducts over the Ouseburn and Willington Dene. At the conclusion of the second lecture he contrasted the splendour of Rome in Trajan's time with the mass of wretchedness and ruin over which the column now raised its head. He said he had now accomplished an enterprise which he formed at the base of Trajan's Column, that of exhibiting it in that room; and if, in acting the part of the showman, he had given them any share of the pleasure he had had in discharging the duty, he had succeeded to his heart's content.

Mr John Clayton moved a vote of thanks. He said that no one could be more fitted to illustrate the spirited representations of the pictured column of Trajan to his fellow-townsmen than Dr Bruce, by

reason of his great learning and familiar acquaintance with the Roman language and literature.

The British Association for the Advancement of Science held its annual meeting at Newcastle-upon-Tyne in August 1863. Sir William Armstrong was president, and Lothian Bell, Esq., was mayor of the town. Every effort was made by the leading men of Newcastle to offer a cordial welcome to the members of the Association. Dr Bruce undertook, as a contribution towards the reception of the Association, to edit a handbook to Newcastle-upon-Tyne. In this work Mr Hodgson Hinde afforded him assistance in the part of the book relating to the early history of the town, and Mr Lothian Bell undertook the chapter dealing with the commercial and industrial resources of the town and district. Dr Bruce in his preface states

that although in writing the book he had chiefly addressed himself to strangers, he was not without hope that the facts which he had been enabled to collect respecting men and things past and present might be both new and interesting to many who, like himself, had been born and bred in the good old town, and had spent within its bounds more than the average span of human existence.

The book contained a masterly sketch of the ancient history of the town by Mr Hodgson Hinde, a description of the ancient churches, of the castle, and of the remains of the old monasteries. It gave an account of the gates and the towers on the walls of the town. There was a most interesting chapter on the social life in Newcastle as Dr Bruce remembered it in his

earlier days; it described the increase of the town in modern times, and the great building schemes carried out by the enterprise of Mr Richard Grainger. It noticed the various institutions of the town. It contained a chapter on the local newspapers, beginning with the year 1639, when one was printed in Newcastle during the sojourn of Charles I. It gave slight sketches of the distinguished men who had been born in the town and district,—among others, Duns Scotus; Bishop Ridley; John Horsley, the antiquary; Charles Hutton, the mathematician; Mark Akenside, the poet; John Brand, the antiquary; William Scott; Lord Stowell; John Scott, Earl of Eldon; Lord Collingwood; Thomas Bewick, the engraver; Robert Morrison, the Chinese scholar; Thomas Miles Richardson, the artist; George and Robert Stephenson, the engineers. The chapter on the river Tyne contained a description of the beauty of the upper waters of the river, especially of the valley of the North Tyne, together with notices of places of historic interest on its banks. It also gave an account of the Port of the Tyne, and a notice of various industrial works situate on the river between Elswick and the sea. The chapter on the industrial resources of Newcastle and its neighbourhood by Mr Lothian Bell gave a most interesting and exhaustive account of the coal trade and of the various industries connected with metallurgy, and an account of the large engineering and shipbuilding works on the Tyne, and the chemical works, the glass works, and earthenware factories in the district. It gave particulars of the extensive work carried on by the Tyne Improvement Commissioners for deepening the river and improving the access of ships to the Port. The book was well illus-

trated by maps and engravings. It was, however, too bulky for a handbook, and it was found expedient to publish a revised edition more compact in form. In June 1864 a revised edition was issued and had a large sale.

For a long time the attention of some antiquaries had been called to markings on rocks of a peculiar character near Rowting Lynn in Northumberland, and in the year 1853 Dr Johnston, in his book 'Botany of the Eastern Borders,' gave a brief account of some of these markings illustrated by an etching of a rock made from a drawing by the Rev. Canon Greenwell.

Mr Tate of Alnwick, at the anniversary meeting of the Berwickshire Naturalists' Club held at Embleton on the 7th of September 1853, gave an account of the markings on the rock at Rowting Lynn. The Rev. Canon Greenwell, in an address given by him as President of the Tyneside Naturalists' Club, described circular markings on the stones of the camp at Old Bewick. The Rev. William Procter, vicar of Doddington, about the same time found on stones in his parish several markings similar to those at Rowting Lynn. Great difficulty arose as to the purport of these markings, which were believed to belong to a very early period of history. It occurred to Algernon, the fourth Duke of Northumberland, that the subject was worthy of investigation, and he considered that it might prove useful to have accurate drawings made of all the markings known to exist in Northumberland and have them placed in the hands of antiquaries, who might thereby be led to investigate their origin and import and compare them with those of a similar character in other

places. Accordingly he determined to print for private circulation lithographic representations of the markings in Northumberland.

At the close of the meeting of the British Association which took place in Newcastle in the autumn of 1863, some of its promoters were invited to partake of the hospitalities of Alnwick Castle. One morning after breakfast the Duke invited to his private room the Rev. Charles H. Hartshorne, Dr Daniel Wilson of Toronto, Mr John Clayton of The Chesters, and Dr Bruce. The floor of the apartment was strewn with rubbings of rock-markings, recently sent to the Duke by the Rev. William Procter. After some general conversation respecting them, the Duke said that considerable attention had been paid to the history of the county during the Roman period, but very scant justice had been done to our ancient British forefathers. Whether these markings had any relation to them he could only conjecture, and what their meaning was he could not say, but he would wish the subject to be investigated in the hope that some light might be thrown upon an obscure page of the history of our country. Then turning to Dr Bruce, he asked him if he would undertake the charge of having accurate drawings made of all the Northumbrian examples, and of such others as would illustrate them, and further, of superintending the engraving of these drawings. With this request Dr Bruce cheerfully complied. He visited, in company with Mr Mossman the artist, all the rock-markings in Northumberland, entered into a voluminous correspondence with various antiquaries who were likely to throw light upon the subject, and gathered together all the information available respecting it. The result

was that in the year 1869 there appeared a handsome volume in which drawings were given on a large scale of the incised markings on stone found in the county of Northumberland, together with similar markings on stone found in Argyleshire and other places. This volume contained an introduction by Dr Bruce in which reference was made to the various books and memoirs dealing with the subject,<sup>1</sup> and in which he set forth the substance of communications made to him by distinguished antiquaries respecting the meaning of the marked stones. There is not room here to enter at any length upon a discussion of the various opinions entertained respecting these markings; thus much may be said, that the general opinion of antiquaries favours the suggestion that they had a religious import, and were connected with places of burial.

The introduction concludes with the following passage :—

“If by the distribution of this book inquiry should be stimulated and additional facts obtained, the design of its noble originator will have been accomplished.

“The whole of the plates contained in this volume were drawn and placed in the hands of the engraver during the lifetime of the late Duke, but the work was not finished when his lamented decease took place. On communicating with his Grace the present Duke, I was at once and most cordially directed to have the work completed as

<sup>1</sup> One of the most elaborate treatises on the subject is that by Sir J. Y. Simpson, Bart., M.D., entitled “Archaic Sculpturings of cups, circles, &c., upon stones and rocks in Scotland, England, and other countries.”

the former Duke intended it should be. Under the kind auspices, therefore, of Algernon George, sixth Duke of Northumberland, it now appears."

A museum of British antiquities had been established in 1826 at Alnwick Castle by Sir David Smith, Commissioner to the 3rd Duke, and of late years it had acquired considerable proportions, having become a repository for objects of antiquarian interest found on the ducal estates. Algernon the 4th Duke wished a catalogue of the museum to be made, and he requested Mr Albert Way to undertake the work, and no one was more competent. Mr Way made considerable preparations for it, but his health failing before he had formally set in order any portion of the catalogue for the printer, he was compelled to relinquish the work in which he took so great an interest.

Dr Bruce, who had enjoyed the friendship of Mr Way for more than twenty years, and had often conferred with him regarding the museum, at the request of the 4th Duke undertook to complete the catalogue. With this in view all Mr Way's papers were put into his hands,—the Rev. Canon Greenwell, Mr Roach Smith, Sir Augustus Franks, and the Rev. S. S. Lewis of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, all rendering valuable aid.

In the autumn of 1863 Dr Bruce paid several visits to Alnwick Castle, spending most of his time there in the museum cataloguing the various objects of interest. The work was to him a labour of love, and to it he devoted the utmost care; but as he could only give such time as could be spared from other engagements, the arranging of the museum

and the cataloguing of the articles occupied some years.

In the latter months of 1868 he was still engaged upon the catalogue, the 6th Duke having requested him to continue the work.

These letters to his wife refer to his occupation during his visits to Alnwick in 1868 and 1872.

"ALNWICK CASTLE, *Oct. 6, 1868.*

"Yesterday I went with Lord Dunraven and his two daughters to Warkworth Castle, Hermitage, and Church. The afternoon was fine, and we enjoyed it. This morning I took Lord Dunraven all over the outside of the Castle and over the mural towers before breakfast."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, *Dec. 7, 1868.*

"I have not been out of the Castle to-day, and I do not think anybody else has. I have been hard at work at the coins. I have not written any part of the catalogue to-day, but I have examined the whole of the silver coins, 470, and have arranged the whole according to their reigns."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, *14th Dec. 1868.*

"It is now getting too dark to work at the coins, so I am going for a walk. Yesterday afternoon I walked with Lord Algernon to Hulne: the weather was fine.

"I have just been reckoning up, and I find I have 138 coins still to do. It has been stiff work throughout. I often get a group of coins which seem to be all the same, but when I



come to inspect them closely I find that they differ and require separate description. Thus instead of making a grand leap I am longer detained than if they differed entirely."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, 29th Dec. 1868.

"Things have gone on very pleasantly here to-day. The Duke likes the look of the book on the Circles. The Duchess has given me her keys to look at some other stores of coins which I had not seen before. Amongst them is the gold coin of which I brought a drawing."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, 2nd Dec. 1872.

"Here I am once again in my sunny room at the top of Prudhoe Tower. I have got Lady Percy's boudoir to work in. There is a great lot of coins of all sorts that I want to put into some sort of order. I have found a large silver medal which was struck on the occasion of the restoration of the Castle by the first Duke. I never heard of it before. There is on one side the bust of the Duke and on the other a representation of the Castle. There ought to be another medal struck to commemorate the recent renovation. The old oak has arrived all safe; I have written a line to our son-in-law to thank him for sending it off so carefully. It has not been inspected yet."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, 6th Dec. 1872.

"This morning I was at work arranging the Roman coins in trays, and this evening I have been puzzling out three large gold Egyptian

coins which are very beautiful, and are to go into the same cabinet. As soon as I saw them I knew I would have difficulty with them, so I took impressions of them in gutta-percha and sent the impressions to Mr Bergne. I got his reply this morning, and though he did not quite make them out, he sent me on the right scent, and by means of a book in the library here I have perfected the description of them. As soon, therefore, as Mr Robertson has finished the trays and the cabinet, which will be done to-morrow, and I get my catalogue copied (and I will see if they cannot do it in the office), I shall be in a condition to deliver up the whole thing to the Duchess entirely finished. The trays and cabinet for the large medals are nearly finished; the medals need but little description,—they speak for themselves."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, 11th Dec. 1872.

"Mr Clayton came last night. I met him at the entrance-hall and took him to his grand room, with which he seemed to be very much astonished. The Duchess leaves me to entertain him, and I have been with him nearly all day. After luncheon we had a long walk in the Park, which has, I have no doubt, done us both good. There will be a strong party from the Castle at the Infirmary ball to-night: I hope to escape going, or if I do I will come away at 11 o'clock. At luncheon to-day the Duchess offered me a ticket, and said that if I went Mr Clayton would go, and if Mr Clayton went Col. Bagot would go. I have, of course, done almost nothing at my

coins to-day, and I do not want to leave them unfinished. I think I may get done so as to be home on Friday. We are to have dinner at 7 o'clock to-night on account of the ball."

In the year 1879 he was still engaged on the catalogue, and he continued to devote to its completion such leisure time as he could command.

On the 16th of October 1879 he wrote from Alnwick to his son Gainsford—

"I have been working at the catalogue: it is exceedingly difficult at once to arrange the articles scientifically and to get them fitted into proper places."

The next letters to his son Gainsford give an account of his engagements during 1877-78.

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 10th May 1877.

"I have just now a few minutes' leisure which I wish to enjoy in a little chat with you.

"We enjoyed our stay at Lincoln Hill [his brother's house], but we had a shivering time of it. We are perhaps all the better for it. We were a great deal at The Chesters.

"I am now working at the Alnwick Castle catalogue. We breakfast at 8 o'clock, and I go into my study at 9 and apply all my powers to the catalogue until it is time for me to go to the mid-day prayer-meeting. In two or three months I ought at this rate to have nearly completed my task.

"I have been a good deal at the Infirmary

to-day: we have now got a committee that is determined to have things set to rights. The ladies of our singing band keep well together and do much good.

"As soon as I have done the Duke's catalogue I will attempt the History of Newcastle. There is much information to be had merely for the gathering. A gentleman whom I met at Alnwick Castle last autumn, Sir Edward Sullivan, wrote to me the other day asking me to give a north-country name to a yacht which Mr Leslie of Hebburn is building for him. I suggested 'Coventina,' the name of the nymph who presided over the newly discovered fountain at Procolitia, and 'Coventina' it is to be.

"The demand for my book on the Wall still continues: Mr Clayton bought a second-hand (but perfectly good) copy for a friend in the South last week for £4, 10s., and I have just got a letter from some booksellers in Edinburgh enquiring if a copy can be had."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 19th June 1877.

"I write because I think that amidst all your worry you like to have your mind amused with a little of our home news. On Sunday I preached a sermon in Nelson Street Chapel for the Young Men's Christian Association: I do not suppose the collection amounted to much. The great event of to-day has been the bazaar for this Association in Sir William Armstrong's banqueting-hall. There have been a great many people at it; the grounds were in beautiful order; there was admission also by special payment to

the fernery. It has been quite a fashionable lounge all day. It is to be open to-morrow. Your mother is quite well, but she has been serving at the bazaar all day and is rather tired."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 19th August 1877.

"I have been longing for a quiet moment in order that I might answer your letter of the 13th inst., in which you inform me that your son is named John Collingwood Gainsford. Whatever the name you might have given the boy I could not but feel the liveliest interest in him, destined, as I trust he is, to be the head of our family in the fourth generation. But since you have given him names identifying him with one of the old household of Alnwick, with myself, and yourself, he seems to be unspeakably precious to me. If it had been possible I should have been with you last Sunday to have been present at the baptism of the child and to have mingled my prayers with yours on his behalf, but it could not be; but that matters little, for however widely we may be separated on earth our prayers meet at the Throne. I am fully convinced that I owe my position in society, and any usefulness I may be able to exercise, largely to the prayers of my parents and grandparents. May the blessing which they have implored upon their seed fall with increased power upon their descendants of the fourth generation, and may young Collingwood be enabled by the grace of God to do more for God and His cause than any that have borne his name.

"All last week I was at Chesters at work with

the coins from Coventina's Well: Roach Smith was there. I came home last night to meet my sister Mary Williamson, who is paying us a short visit. I return to Chesters on Tuesday, and I go to Kielder Castle on Saturday, as I am to preach at Kielder on Sunday."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 7th September 1877.

"I have had plenty of the country this summer. I have been a good deal at Chesters working at the coins; I have been at Kielder Castle and also at Alnwick Castle. At Kielder I supplied the pulpit one Sunday; the Duke and his party attended. At Alnwick I am working at the catalogue, which I hope soon to complete. I had Mr Roach Smith over with me last week to see the museum and to assist me."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 25th September 1877.

"I have of late been a good deal occupied with antiquarian pursuits. I have been a great deal at The Chesters in order to assist in examining Mr Clayton's 'Find' of thirteen thousand coins. Now the whole thing is about finished. I have had to write a paper upon the Procolitia 'Find' for publication in a book which the antiquaries of Germany and the world are preparing to present as a memorial to Mommsen, the great epigraphist and historian. My paper is being printed at Leipsic. I was at Falstone yesterday examining a collection of Roman coins which there is some talk of the Duke purchasing.

"The Iron and Steel Institute and General Grant have been in Newcastle. I have been

a good deal taken up with both. The Iron and Steel people went to The Chesters; they were much pleased."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 5th October 1877.

"I went yesterday to Rutland's to see the Duchess Florentia's Views of Alnwick and Warkworth Castles, as you desired me. I think that it is a book which ought to be in the cabinet, and so, as you kindly authorised me to do, I brought it away. I thank you very much for it. Last evening when tired with my day's work I looked carefully over it: I greatly admired the views, and as I am so familiar with every part of the castle as it was and is, the examination of the book afforded me much enjoyment. The paper is rather spotted in places, but on the whole it is a good copy. I shall have it full bound in morocco."

"KIELDER CASTLE, Feb. 17th, 1878.

"On Thursday I paid a visit to Mr Clayton at The Chesters; he is always glad to see me. On Friday I came to Falstone, where I delivered a lecture in our church on the "Corroboration afforded to Scripture by the recent discoveries in Nineveh." On Saturday morning I breakfasted with the new rector of Falstone, Mr Beal. He is a good Chinese scholar, and is well acquainted with the Buddhist doctrines. I got much interesting information from him. In the afternoon I came on here. On my arrival I got a cart and set off on a visit to Tynehead, the precise spot where the Tyne rises. It was very

curious: the drain from a field gave it some little volume, and off it set on its journey to the German Ocean. Immediately to the west of it were some apparently stagnant waters which formed the head of Liddell which runs into the Eden, and thus into the Solway. On putting some little bits of paper into the water we saw it was moving slowly westward. At this point a rude stone wall divides Scotland from England.

"This has been a beautiful day. About 80 people were in the pretty, comfortable church which the Duke has built. I always enjoy the service here. It is so pleasant to see the people coming over the hills from all sides. It makes me feel the solemnity of my duty.

"In the afternoon I walked about 3 miles up the Kielder to see an old lady who has recently lost her sister. She lives all alone in the wilds, and it is a charity to call upon her."

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 21st September 1878.

"Yesterday and to-day have been fine days though rather cold. I hope you have been flying before the wind, and making the water dash about your bows. How does the book go on [new edition of Maude and Pollock on Shipping]? —it will be a great comfort to you to write the word 'Finis.' I am getting on with my catalogue, but I cannot dash through it: it is a thing of great detail, and it is difficult to describe things neatly. I was at Housesteads on Tuesday with Sir Henry Pottinger and another gentleman.

"The rain fell incessantly, and the wind was



high, so that we got thoroughly wet, but we left nothing undone. We got no cold. I shall be going to Alnwick Castle about the 1st of October to stay a few days and push on with and perhaps finish the catalogue. When all is put into shape it will require revision, and the printing will be a business.

"I have bought (through Mr Lewis of Cambridge) a nice set of Scripture coins for the Duchess of Northumberland. They have not come down to me from the London dealer yet, but I expect them soon."

In January 1880 the whole of the MS. of the Catalogue of the Alnwick Museum was in the printer's hands, and the printing was completed in April 1881. It was printed for private circulation only. The book formed a handsome quarto volume of 204 pages, splendidly illustrated.

## CHAPTER XVI.

1861, SHORT TRIP TO THE CONTINENT IN MAY—TRIP TO ITALY IN THE AUTUMN — 1862, MARRIAGE OF DAUGHTER ; 1874, DEATH OF DAUGHTER—1867, VISITS DIJON, VIENNE, ROME, PERUGIA, CATANIA, SYRACUSE, MALTA, ST PAUL'S BAY, GALLIPOLI, PESCARA, ANCONA, CHRISTIAN ANTIQUITIES AT RAVENNA, MONT CENIS PASS.

IN May 1861 Dr Bruce took a short trip to the Continent with his daughter. They visited Mayence, with which he was delighted. He there met a learned priest with antiquarian sympathies, who contributed much interesting information concerning the Roman antiquities of the place. The museum he found rich in Roman remains discovered on the spot, and he filled several pages of his note-book with observations on them. He purchased at an old curiosity shop an antique decanter of Venetian glass large enough to hold a magnum, which he took special care to bring safely home, and on occasions when friends dined with him to whom he wished to pay special honour, the decanter, duly charged, made its appearance.

At Treves exceptional interest was aroused by the "Roman lions of the place" — the bridge, the baths, the amphitheatre, and the Black Gate, which he described as very wonderful. The Basilica also was an object of special interest, then used as a Lutheran church. At Rheims, in common with every traveller

of cultivated taste, he was struck by the majestic grandeur of the cathedral, which he regarded as one of the finest Gothic structures he had ever seen. "We thought of poor Joan of Arc, who there witnessed the coronation of her king, Charles VI." In a letter to his wife he says: "My visit to Rheims the other day has revived my interest in 'La Pucelle,' and we purpose visiting next Friday the place where the poor girl was so cruelly murdered."

In the autumn of the same year Dr Bruce made another Continental tour, accompanied this time by his wife and daughter, visiting Milan, Venice, Naples, and other places. Writing to his son Gainsford from Naples, October 24, 1861, he says:—

"On Monday I had the most wonderful ride I ever had in my life. We passed Virgil's tomb and went first to Puzzuoli, the ancient Puteoli. The ruins of the temples there are most marvellous. One of them is the temple of Neptune, where Augustus sacrificed before embarking to fight the Battle of Actium. You will remember that it was at Puteoli that the Apostle Paul landed after leaving Malta; we walked over part of the Roman way by which he pursued his journey to Rome, treading upon the very stones which he trod upon. Then we went to Cumæ, Baiæ, and Misenum. We sailed upon the Lake of Misenum and saw the Lucrine Lake and Lake Avernus. At those places we saw some stupendous ruins. The remains of Cicero's villa and the palace of Cæsar were pointed out to us. It was at Baiæ that poor Hadrian died. We think of leaving next Monday for Civita Vecchia for

Rome. The brigands are not subdued yet. There was a regular fight with them on Sunday not far from Mount Vesuvius. Many of the military were killed; seventy-five of the brigands were brought into the town yesterday."

The travellers left Naples for Civita Vecchia, intending to visit Rome, but they met with so much discomfort that they were compelled to abandon their intention. The following letter from Civita Vecchia, dated 30th October 1861, from Dr Bruce to his mother, gives an account of their adventures:—

"When we left Naples on Tuesday afternoon we feared the weather was breaking. In the course of the night the storm began. The sky was continuously lighted up with lightning, and the rain fell in waterspouts. We landed here in the midst of the storm, in an open boat. When we got into a first-class carriage on the railway for Rome we thought our troubles were at an end. Not so. The rain continued, and the rails were often under water. At length, about fifteen miles from this, the train came on a small bridge which was too small for the torrent, and had been injured to some extent. The engine ran off the line and turned over. The luggage van was smashed and its contents washed into the Mediterranean by the current. The first first-class carriage was run into by the buffers of the luggage-van and partially broken. We felt an ugly jerk and were thrown over one another, but were not in the slightest degree injured. We had to remove out of our carriage into the hindermost one of the train, as we

feared the water might rise and throw it over. For four hours we sat in a wet, crowded carriage. Fearing at length that night would overtake us before we had found shelter, we left the train for the nearest house, which was a mile distant. The storm was still at its height—thunder, lightning, and rain such as we never see in England. The first thing that we had to do was to climb the fence of the railway. Then we had to cross a ploughed field, all mud and water, and then to wade through a surging stream which took the ladies up to the middle. This brought us to the highway, but in several places it was flooded, and we had to wade considerable tracts almost up to our knees. At length we reached a dirty farmhouse where twenty-five of us were lodged. We got some bread, wine, and uncooked bacon. I had to sit in my wet clothes for about four hours; there was no possibility of drying our things at their poor fire of sticks. At nine o'clock we gave up all hope of being rescued by the railway officials,—we were only fifteen miles from Civita Vecchia,—and retired to our chambers. There were five in the bed in which Charlotte and Williamina tried to sleep. I, with about seven others, went to the barn. Divesting myself of all my lower garments, I enjoyed the luxury of a dry covering of hay. I did not sleep much. To-day has turned out fine. The railway people sent omnibuses to bring us back to Civita Vecchia. Arrived here, we and some others were making arrangements for taking a carriage and going by the ordinary road to Rome when the Government surveyor told us that two of the

bridges on it were carried away. Charlotte and Williamina, whose nerves have been sufficiently tried already, agree with me in thinking that we have had adventures enough, and that as no duty calls us we had better not force our way to the Pope's city."

The following are extracts from letters written by Dr Bruce to Mr Clayton and read at the meetings of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, held on the 6th November and 4th December 1861.

In a letter written on the 26th of October, Dr Bruce says :—

"At Milan I took a cursory glance at the Roman inscriptions in the church of St Ambrose. Amongst the Christian monumental slabs I noticed a good many bearing the representation of the golden candlestick of the Temple. I am rather inclined to think, from the number of these slabs that I have seen in my present journey, at Milan, Verona, and Naples, and the Roman character of the names on the slabs, that the candlestick was adopted as a purely Christian emblem at a time when a rage for symbols prevailed, and that it represented the Church, which, in a secondary sense, is The Light of the World.<sup>1</sup>

"Being so near Verona, I could not help taking a run to it. When you were there you would notice the Mithraic Tablets. From the epithets applied to Mithras in one or two instances, for example OMNIPOTENTI DEO, I am

<sup>1</sup> See Letter, *Archæologia Æliana*, vol. vi., New Series, p. 86.

more than ever convinced that Mithras was a sort of heathen antichrist.

"When polytheism had worn itself out, and the Christian religion had begun to prevail, the worship of this deity was set up to the exclusion of all other gods of the Pantheon.

"The masonry of our wall is much superior to most of that at Pompeii. The fountains in Pompeii are numerous, each being provided with a cistern something like that at the north gate of Borcovicus. I measured the ruts in the streets. From the centre of the one to the centre of the other is 4 feet 7 inches. I measured one street, which was 7 feet 3 inches wide, and another which was 6 feet 4 inches. We must not be surprised that the streets in our stations are so narrow."

In another letter to Mr Clayton he describes some Roman work at Fiesole, said to be the wall of a palace.

"The work reminded me strongly of the north gate of Borcovicus. The chief interest of Volterra consists in its museum. Here are preserved an immense number of cinerary urns found in the tombs. Curiously enough, the pine-cone ornament is always found accompanying a tomb, on it or in it. I feel sure that this ornament, that we so often meet with in Roman stations, and which it appears the Romans borrowed from the Etruscans, is emblematical of animal fire, of life. There seems to me something beautiful in their planting it in their tombs. They seem by doing so to express their con-

fidence that the seed which they thus sow in weakness will one day blossom in eternal life. Most of the urns are doubtless Etruscan : I had not gone far in my examination of them before I had put the question to the curator, ' Are you sure that this is not Roman ? ' He told me in many cases they could not distinguish the Etruscan from the Roman unless, as was sometimes the case, they had an inscription upon them."

On their return home Dr Bruce delivered in connection with various religious and charitable institutions lectures on Herculaneum and Pompeii, all of which were well attended.

In April of the following year his daughter was married to Mr John Philipson of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. She died after a short illness in August 1874, leaving two sons and two daughters. Her death occasioned a great blank in the family circle at Newcastle.

In March 1867 Dr Bruce journeyed to Rome, travelling *viâ* Marseilles by Dijon and Vienne. Writing to his wife he says:—

"While sitting at the table d'hôte at Dijon, a couple of musicians came in and seated themselves in a corner and began to play on instruments resembling a guitar. The whole thing put me in mind of the minstrels of the middle ages which abounded in Burgundy and Provence, but in the times of Richard III. and the Edwards they would sing battle-songs along with the music. Dijon was not so interesting a town as I expected, it having suffered much during the wars of the middle ages."



Writing from Vienne he says :—

“My object in coming here was to examine its antiquities and see if there were any traces of early Christianity, which was here manifested in Roman times with peculiar power. The Roman remains are magnificent; they are colossal and some of them exquisitely beautiful: I am so glad I came here. As to Christianity, I met no trace of the glorious old martyrs of Vienne.”

On the way from Marseilles to Leghorn, when walking the deck of the steamer with a fellow-passenger Mr Carruthers, the proprietor of the ‘Inverness Courier,’ this gentleman remarked that there was a person of my name who had obtained a considerable reputation by a book he had written upon the Roman Wall. I told him that I knew him intimately. At Leghorn Dr Bruce rested some days, staying at the house of his brother Thomas. On the first Sunday after his arrival at Leghorn he preached for Dr Stewart, the Free Church minister.

“I was tired and needed rest, but I wished to show myself as friendly as possible. The congregation was small. Before service I went to the Sunday School: it was to me an interesting sight to see the young Italians under Scriptural instruction.”

On the way to Rome Dr Bruce passed through Thrasimene, on the way to Perugia. He says of Perugia :—

“The walls of the town are the most massive of any that I have ever seen; the streets are as

narrow as the 'Chares' of Newcastle. We have been to see the Etruscan Museum; it contains a great number of very ancient sarcophaguses and other remains."

On the 15th of March he and his brother Thomas arrived in Rome. Dr Bruce was provided with a letter of introduction from Dr Hübner to Dr Henzen, and he had some pleasant interviews with this antiquary. Signor Rosa, who had charge of the excavations at Rome,

"paid us great attention and explained everything. The ruins are really tremendous. We saw where the original walls of Rome had been, where Romulus' cottage had stood, where Tiberius erected his palace, and we noticed the additions made by Vespasian and others. We next went to the museum of the Lateran to see the sculptures and paintings which have been derived from the Catacombs; we lingered there until the museum was closed. On Sunday after breakfast we went to the church, where service was conducted by Mr Lewis. His sermon was a very able and profitable one. The room was quite full; the simplicity of the service was most refreshing. We went to hear vespers in St Peter's, crossing the Tiber in a boat."

The whole of Monday morning Dr Bruce spent in the Catacombs of St Calixtus.

"We then went to a Jewish catacomb which has been but recently discovered. This was very interesting; Jewish emblems such as the golden candlestick and the palm-tree abound. We then

went to the English burial-ground, which is full of touching memorials. Our next point was the Church of St Clement. Beneath the church, which is below the level of the street, is another ancient church, and underneath that again is a series of constructions said to be the house of Clement. I have no doubt that it has originally been a temple of Mythras, the eastern sun-god, but I have not time to give you my reason for thinking so."

He was fully occupied during his visit to Rome, and saw nearly everything he wished to see except some places in the suburbs which could not be safely visited. Writing home he says :—

"Within this last fortnight persons have been captured by brigands at the places I wanted to go to, and enormous sums demanded for their liberation. Neither Thomas nor I are disposed to run the risk of anything of this kind."

At Naples he spent a whole day in the museum. At Pompeii he was met by two or three of the persons directing the excavations, and was taken by them to the places that had been most recently excavated.

On the 23rd March he and his brother, intending to visit Malta, embarked at Naples on board a steamer which took them to Messina.

"The entrance into the Straits of Messina was exceedingly beautiful. Messina is a beautiful city : as soon as we landed we breakfasted and took a cab for a couple of hours and drove all over it."

They proceeded to Catania by rail by way of seeing something of the country parts of Sicily.

“We passed through a plantation of orange trees almost as large as forest trees; they were covered with blossom, and filled our carriage with a delightful perfume. The country is covered with vines, olives, figs, almond-trees, peach-trees, lemons, and prickly-pears. I never saw so rich a district.”

Embarking at Catania, they proceeded by steamship to Syracuse. There they visited the Temple of Minerva,

“which is now a Roman Catholic church. The ancient Doric columns are built into the walls of the church. We then went to the museum, where we saw some Egyptian inscriptions, some Greek altars, and Roman remains, showing by what different people the place had been held. We again went outside the town, where we saw a large Roman amphitheatre and Greek theatre. We also saw an aqueduct. We were next taken to see a prison, excavated out of the rock, which is called Dionysius’ Ear. It is so constructed that the whispers of the prisoners were conveyed to a focus, where they could be heard distinctly by the tyrant. The echo in it was extraordinary. The tearing of a little bit of paper was re-echoed with great distinctness, and the letting off of a small toy cannon made a reverberation of sound like the loud and long-continued roll of thunder. Perhaps the most interesting sight of the day was a visit to the Catacombs. These differ considerably from those at Rome, but chiefly, as I

think, from the diversity of the strata of which they are constructed. These are cut out of the oolite, a stone resembling bath stone. Galleries extend for many miles: they are three or four storeys deep. You know that Paul was here for three days on his way from Malta to Rome. We were shown an ancient church, one evidently belonging to the Byzantine period (about the time of Constantine or later). Here our guide told us St Paul said mass and preached for three days."

On the 26th March they arrived at Malta, and on the 29th Dr Bruce, his brother, and a friend made an expedition to St Paul's Bay.

"I had my Testament with me, and we read the passage from the Acts. We saw the low headland against which the breakers struck, which induced the shipmen to suppose that they drew near to some country; and we saw the spot where the ship must have been brought up by four anchors cast out of the stern. We saw the creek with a shore into which they were minded to thrust in the ship. We saw the place where two seas met, and in imagination we saw the shipwrecked crew and passengers climbing up the rocks to the point where we were standing."

On Sunday, 31st March, Dr Bruce and his brother went to the Free Church.

"The church was well filled, a large part of the congregation consisting of soldiers and

sailors. I preached from 'Say unto me, I am thy salvation.' The communion was administered. On Monday my principal business was to examine the master fort of this military island, St Angelo. The commander of it, Colonel Romer, kindly took me over it. I can give you no idea of the vastness and strength of the fortifications. On Tuesday we took a carriage to explore still further the interior of the island and its southern coast. The principal object of the day's journey was to visit some colossal stone structures of great antiquity. These somewhat resemble the Druidical Circles of England, but are much more complete and elaborate. I have seen nothing so grand of its kind since I saw Stonehenge. Some of the stones were marked in a peculiar manner, and I looked very earnestly in hopes of finding something like our Northumbrian markings, but in vain."

On the 3rd of April Dr Bruce and his brother embarked for Catania. On their way they touched at Syracuse, where they had a fine view of the snowy crater of Mount Etna. At Catania Dr Bruce visited the museum, and saw there an interesting collection of Greek and Roman antiquities found in the place. He also visited the massive remains of two Greek theatres and the ruins of a Roman bath, which is below the present cathedral. On 5th April he embarked in a steamer bound for Gallipoli. He found Gallipoli the least civilised of any of the Italian towns he had visited.

"Our inn is a very primitive affair. It was of no use asking for tea or coffee for our breakfast,

but after waiting for nearly two hours whilst it was being bought and prepared, we got a meal consisting of soup, boiled beef, omelette, wine, and oranges."

They travelled from Gallipoli to Lecce by road, through a country chiefly planted with olives. Lecce they found

"a very fine town, a good deal of departed grandeur about it, but now, in consequence of the railroad, it is again flourishing. The practice of reckoning the hours of the day to the full number of twenty-four still prevails in Gallipoli and Lecce. They begin their reckoning at sunset, which makes the hours vary according to the length of the day. Thus in winter the hour of noon is 10 o'clock, at midsummer it is 16 o'clock. I was very sorry to pass Brindisi on my way to Bari without stopping at it. This was the most famous of all the ports of the Romans. Bari also is a Roman port, and stood on the Appian Way. Horace rested at it on his way to Brundisium. He tells us it was celebrated for its fish, so out of compliment to him we ordered some fish for breakfast."

On the 11th April they arrived at Pescara a little before sunrise. From Pescara they made a visit to Chieti.

"On our return to Pescara we went to dine at the Trattoria. For one course I got a fry of fish; they were ugly little cuttlefish. I tried to eat them, but they were all gristle. The waiter volunteered the information that they were called 'bottles of ink.' This information

did not improve my appetite, so I sent the fish away."

April the 12th found them at Ancona.

"This afternoon we have spent in examining the town and its harbour. The port was constructed by Trajan, to whom, on the entrance to the mole, is a triumphal arch of marble erected by his wife and sister. The principal church contains many remains of an ancient Roman temple which formerly occupied its site."

On April 13 they paid a visit to Loretto. They returned to Ancona the same night and took train for Bologna, where they arrived between two and three o'clock next morning. There they spent the Sunday, and early on Monday morning took train to Ravenna. This place Dr Bruce found richer in Christian antiquities than even Rome itself. Most of the ancient churches in the city contained mosaics.

"These are for the most part very beautiful, and many of them as fresh as they were a thousand years ago. The Saviour is several times represented, but usually as the Good Shepherd feeding His sheep, never in the painful mode in which the modern Romanist delights to figure him."

On Tuesday they made an early start for Leghorn by rail, passing through forty tunnels, and arriving late in the afternoon.

On his way home Dr Bruce crossed by the Mont Cenis Pass. Part of the journey at night was accom-



plished in sledges which "bumped a good deal," and after rejoining the diligence the "lurching and bumping of the vehicle was great." In ascending the Pass the coach was drawn by fourteen horses. He arrived in Paris on Tuesday the 21st April at seven in the morning, and reached home on the 24th of April.

## CHAPTER XVII.

1854, VISIT TO LORD LONDESBOROUGH—1864, ARCHÆOLOGICAL INSTITUTE AT WARWICK—VISIT TO CANON GREENWELL AT DURHAM—VISITS ALNWICK CASTLE IN SEPTEMBER—1865, DEATH OF ALGERNON, FOURTH DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND—VISIT TO LORD LONSDALE AT LOWTHER—HOLIDAY IN WALES WITH HIS ELDEST SON—1869, VISIT TO RABY CASTLE—1875, VISIT TO STANWICK—GIFT TO HIS ELDEST SON OF A CHAIR OF OLD ROMAN OAK.

IN April 1854 Dr Bruce paid a visit to Lord Londesborough at Grimstone: he met Mr Roach Smith and Mr Clayton there. They examined Lord Londesborough's collection of armour and Lady Londesborough's collection of rings and fibulæ, which latter Dr Bruce describes as most gorgeous. He was much interested in a very fine collection of autograph letters of the kings and queens of England. On the 14th of April he with Mr Roach Smith walked to Tadcaster and inspected the Roman station there. Another day was occupied in examining the museum and the Roman antiquities at York. The kindness and hospitality of Lord and Lady Londesborough, and the agreeable society of his friends Mr Roach Smith and Mr Clayton, and the numerous objects of antiquity within reach, made the visit one not soon to be forgotten.

In July 1864 the Archæological Institute held its meeting at Warwick. Dr Bruce attended the meet-

ing, and enjoyed the hospitality of Lord and Lady Leigh at Stoneleigh Abbey.

We give an extract from a letter to his wife from Stoneleigh, dated July 27, 1864 :—

“We have had a pleasant day at Kenilworth, and afterwards at this place. The day has been beautiful. We have had a very distinguished party here to-day—Dr Whewell of Cambridge, the Master of Caius (Dr Guest) and his wife, Lord Camden, Lord Neaves, Beresford Hope, and others. The house here is a magnificent one, and the scenery around is rich in the extreme,—I have seldom seen such oaks as abound. The river Avon runs close past the house. I write just before getting into bed after a hard day's work. To-morrow we go to Coventry.

“The Bishop of Oxford has been with our party until this evening. He looks very much older than he did when I saw him last. So do many others; and I have no doubt they say the same of me.”

In September 1864 Dr Bruce paid a visit to Durham to confer with the Rev. Canon Greenwell respecting the Concentric Circles. A letter to his son Gainsford refers to an incident during the visit :—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 19th Sept. 1864.

“I was at Durham yesterday spending the day with Mr Greenwell, and conversing about the circles. We got locked up in the monastic buildings, the cloister door being fastened whilst

we were in the library. A while ago an unfortunate gentleman had to walk the cloisters all night. However, Mr Greenwell shouted so lustily from the library window that he brought out all the maid-servants of the college in a state of ghostly alarm, and we were eventually delivered. I go to Alnwick Castle on Wednesday noon to stay a week."

At the end of September he was staying at Alnwick Castle, and greatly enjoyed his visit. He wrote to his wife from Alnwick on the 28th of the month:—

*"ALNWICK CASTLE, 28th September 1864.*

"We had rather a brilliant party last night—three Knights of the Garter, with their ribbons and stars. Lord Grey before dinner came and spoke to me. I have had a chat with the Duchess this morning, and told her that I would remain until Saturday."

On the morning of Sunday, 12th of February 1865, Algernon, fourth Duke of Northumberland, died at Alnwick Castle. Loved and respected by all who came in contact with him, graced by personal gifts which endeared him to those who had the privilege of his acquaintance, and known to the men of Northumberland by all manner of good works, his death was mourned as a public calamity. Dr Bruce felt the loss very keenly. He had for some years enjoyed the friendship of the Duke, and had been greatly assisted in his literary work by his generosity; and on many occasions he sought relaxa-

tion and enjoyment in the cultivated society and gracious hospitality which he met with at Alnwick Castle, where he always received a cordial welcome from the Duke and Duchess. On Monday and Tuesday, the 20th and 21st, the body lay in state in Alnwick Castle. Upwards of seven thousand persons attended to pay their last tribute to the memory of this popular nobleman, and the newspapers in the North of England expressed the feelings of the people by recounting the various acts of generosity and munificence that had rendered him so respected and beloved. Dr Bruce wrote obituary notices of the Duke for 'The Times,' 'Morning Post,' and 'Northern Daily Express'; and at the request of some friends of the deceased Duke he collected and superintended the printing of the articles which appeared in the leading newspapers respecting his Grace's death and interment, in order to preserve them in permanent form.

The next letter was written during the first visit Dr Bruce paid at Alnwick Castle after the death of Algernon the fourth Duke, to his wife.

"ALNWICK CASTLE, *Nov. 24, 1865.*

"I had a pleasant journey here to-day. There are several persons staying in the Castle, amongst them Mr Matthew Bell and Mrs Bell, who I have several times met here, and they are very pleasant. There is a chaplain resident here, a very nice man with whom I shall soon be intimate. All the state-rooms are in use; they have not yet received all their furniture, but they look very grand. We had luncheon in the

grand dining-hall. The last time I was in it was when the late Duke was lying in state.

"Lord and Lady Percy are exceedingly agreeable. I am in a different room from any that I previously occupied, a very snug and comfortable one. I have been in the museum this afternoon with Mr Widdrington and the chaplain."

The following letter gives an account of a visit Dr Bruce paid in company with Mr Clayton to Lord Lonsdale at Lowther Castle.

(To his Wife.)

*"August 18, 1855.*

"I had a very pleasant time of it at Chesters though the weather was rather broken. Mr Mossman made two very nice sketches. Yesterday we had a wet ride of it to this place. We get on very nicely here. Lord Lonsdale's secretary took us at once in charge and showed us all over the house. It is rich in statues and pictures. It rained hard all day. There was rather a large party at dinner. I sat next to Lord Malmesbury. We spent some time after breakfast among the statues and books; afterwards we went over the park and examined some of the neighbouring churches. I have enjoyed myself very much."

The next letters were written to his wife when he was taking a short holiday in Wales with his son Gainsford, the first being written on his birthday.

"LLANNEWST, 15th Sept. 1865.

"I do not quite forget the important lessons of this day. For sixty years the Lord has borne with my iniquities. May He give me forgiveness and repentance, and grant me grace to live to His glory for the remainder of my days."

"PEN-Y-GWRYD BY LLANBERIS, 16th Sept. 1865.

"Gainsford has kindly given me a pocket aneroid for my birthday present. It is very useful to us here, both as a means of speculating about the weather and ascertaining our height above the sea. Yesterday we left this inn at about half-past 2 o'clock and walked amongst the hills that group about Snowdon. The sun was very bright and the sky clear, and we had some very delightful views. I find, however, that I am not quite so young as Gainsford nor so enthusiastic in the admiration of scenery. I enjoy the fresh air very much, and shall be all the better for a week's rest. This inn is not quite the paradise I thought it was. The paper in my bedroom is in places covered with black mould. The upper sash of the window won't stay up and the lower won't go up. The landlady, Gainsford tells me, is famous for her omelettes. Well, we had one at dinner yesterday, and Gainsford kept remarking, 'What a marvellous preparation it was.' I could not help noticing, however, that the bottom of it was as black as coal, it having been burnt. All the doors and windows of the house are kept wide open. There are a number

of nice people staying in the house, gentlemen, thorough Englishmen."

"PEN-Y-GWRYD BY LLANBERIS, 23rd Sept. 1865.

"Gainsford has given me his last stamp and his ink is nearly dry. The great event of yesterday was the ascent of the Glyders, two hills at the back of this hotel. They are connected together by a broad ridge, and are very little inferior to Snowdon in height. According to the aneroid the highest point we reached was 2300 feet above the level of the hotel. The great peculiarity of these mountains is that on the summits and flanks enormous quantities of loose stones, many of them of immense size, are piled up one upon another. It puzzles the imagination to conceive of an agency sufficiently powerful to effect such havoc. Unfortunately a mist came on just as we reached the top, which deprived us of the distant view and made me timid and anxious to get down again lest our path should be obscured by the descending clouds. Our descent was very toilsome in consequence of the immense quantities of high blocks of stone which obstructed our way. It was dark by the time we got to the inn, and the light of its windows was very pleasant as we approached it. I have now done with climbing for the present at least. I am stronger and better than before."

The next letter to his wife gives an account of a visit to Raby Castle.



"RABY CASTLE, 21st Oct. 1869.

"I had a pleasant journey to Darlington yesterday. When I got to Winston there was no omnibus or other conveyance. I walked on to the Castle. I was very kindly received. There are several guests here. Lord Lyons, who is our Ambassador at Paris, the Duke of Norfolk, two daughters of the late Earl of Shrewsbury, one of whom is married to Lord Brownlow, Richard Doyle, the famous contributor to 'Punch,' are here, and an old archæological friend of mine, Mr G. Scharf. There is also a Mr Smith, a very great connoisseur of pictures. This morning there has been a photographer here taking groups of the visitors. Out of fun the Duchess would have one taken including Lord Lyons, Richard Doyle, herself, and me. Last night it was a quarter-past eight when we went in to dinner. There were twenty-seven of us. In the evening we assembled in the Baron's Hall, which you know is a very grand room; it is well lighted with gas. I had a good deal of talk with the Duke in the course of the evening. After breakfast the Duchess took us all over the Castle."

In January 1875 Dr and Mrs Bruce paid a visit to Eleanor, Dowager-Duchess of Northumberland, at Stanwick, and greatly enjoyed their visit. In subsequent years their visits were repeated, and they always looked forward with pleasure to the renewal of her Grace's hospitality, and to revisiting the beautiful gardens, which delighted them greatly in

affording them a supply of flowers for the Infirmary nosegays.

The oak chair referred to in the next letter was made from the oak piles taken from the Roman bridge across the Tyne.

(To his son Gainsford.)

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 22nd May 1875.

“I write this to-day in order that you may receive it on the anniversary of your birth. May every blessing attend you in the year on which you are entering. . . . Our birthday present will not reach you for a day or two. The chair, after a Roman model and made of Roman oak, is nearly ready but not quite: it will, we expect, be sent off to you on Monday afternoon, so that you will get it a day or two afterwards. I hope you will like it, but whether you do or not the chair is intrinsically valuable, as we can prove that the oak wood of which it is made was growing on the banks of the Tyne in the year 120, and therefore the sap must have been flowing in its veins when throughout the Holy Land there ‘walked those blessed feet which eighteen hundred years ago were nailed, for our advantage, on the bitter cross.’”

## CHAPTER XVIII.

1859, DR BRUCE ATTENDS SYNOD AT EDINBURGH—LETTER TO HIS ELDEST SON ON HIS CALL TO THE BAR—1863, AGAIN ATTENDS SYNOD AT EDINBURGH—1881, ELECTED MODERATOR OF THE SYNOD OF THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF ENGLAND—ADDRESSES THE EVANGELICAL SOCIETY OF GENEVA—1882, APPOINTED WITH MR FRASER TO VISIT THE CHURCHES IN THE BRISTOL PRESBYTERY.

ON the 9th of May 1859 Dr Bruce, as a representative elder, attended the meeting of the Synod of the United Presbyterian Church at Edinburgh, but took no active part in the proceedings.

On his return from Edinburgh he had a visit from Dr Merivale, afterwards Dean of Ely, and they went along the Roman Wall together, and afterwards paid a visit to the Duke of Northumberland at Alnwick.

The following letters relate to the events above mentioned :—

(To his Wife.)

“ EDINBURGH, 10th *May* 1859.

“ We had a pleasant journey yesterday. We all of us went up in the evening to hear Dr Peddie’s sermon and to see the opening of the Synod. I was very cordially received by those who knew me. I have not seen Dr Peddie since he was in the Hall. He is greyer than I am. On looking round upon the old men whom I

knew when young, and thinking of those who had been already called to their account, I felt the shortness of life very strongly, and as if I ought to retire from the world altogether and try to prepare for my own long journey. The sermon was good, clear, sensible, scriptural, but, like the weather just now, lacking in warmth."

Writing on the 23rd of May a birthday letter to his son Gainsford, he says:—

"I had a pleasant week in Edinburgh, but I did not do much. I found living out of town a great disadvantage, as I lost many discussions that I should like to have heard, and one or two that I should have liked to engage in. I met Dr (Sir James) Simpson at a party, and was glad to see him, as he had just come from a visit to the Wall. I have had a very pleasant run with Mr Merivale to the Wall and Alnwick Castle, but he is rather taciturn. The Duke and Duchess were very kind. I am pressed for copy for the Geography. I wish I could get my Wall book out. I have only 300 copies of the hand-book of History left. The last edition was 1000 copies.

"Your mind will naturally be much occupied with your future prospects: still, it is of vast importance that you should look a little beyond your professional career; think of the close of life, and of that eternity of which life is the preparation. May God give you grace to be faithful unto death, then the day of your departure from this world will be the best birthday you ever had."

In June 1859 Dr Bruce's eldest son, Gainsford, was called to the Bar, and the following letter from his father was addressed to him on this occasion :—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 9th June 1859.

“For five-and-twenty years past you have been preparing for the business of life. Now you are called to enter upon it. May God bless you. It is the earnest prayer of your mother, myself, and praying friends that you may be enabled with a good degree of consistency to fulfil your sacramental oath, and so to discharge the duties of the calling on which you now enter, and for which you have been so long preparing, as to redound to your own honour and advantage, to the welfare of your fellow-men, and, above all, to the glory of your God and Redeemer. You will have your own difficulties and struggles and discouragements, but, with diligence and probity and God's blessing, you will, I doubt not, earn a sufficient livelihood and be the means of doing much good.”

In May 1863 Dr Bruce again went to Edinburgh to attend the United Presbyterian Synod as representative elder. He was appointed one of the committee of twenty-five to inquire into charges which had been brought against persons of high character and respectability. The following extract from a letter to his son Gainsford refers to the proceedings of the committee :—

“EDINBURGH, 13th May 1863.

“We are sitting just now, and I avail myself of a pause to write. You need not be afraid of

the committee acting carelessly. They are most of them very clear-headed men, and make clean work as they proceed, minuting everything.

"*P.S.*, Thursday morning.—We sat till past 11 o'clock last night, and have had an hour of it this morning. We have heard Mr — at great length. I wish you could have been present at this Synod. With great freedom of utterance, there is much ability, sterling integrity, and great wisdom displayed."

(To his Wife.)

"EDINBURGH, 14th May 1863.

"I was so closely occupied yesterday I could not write to you. We finished our anxious labours last night, exculpating Dr —. This morning there has been a long conference upon mission work in England. I spoke early in the debate for about twenty minutes. The debate upon union is going forward just now. I came out to write this after Dr Cairns had finished a most admirable speech."

The union between the congregations in England of the United Presbyterian Church and the congregations of the Presbyterian Church in England was carried out at Liverpool on the 13th of June 1876, when the Moderator of the United Presbyterian Church and the Moderator of the Presbyterian Church in England sat side by side, and each in turn read a declaration affirming that the congregations of the United Presbyterian Church in England uniting with the Presbyterian Church in England are to be no longer under the jurisdiction of the Synod of the

United Presbyterian Church, but to form part of the united body now to be constituted and hereafter to be known as the Presbyterian Church of England.

The body thus constituted formed an important and powerful organisation, having churches in all the great centres in England.

In September 1880 the Rev. Donald Fraser, D.D., the retiring Moderator of the Presbyterian Church of England and Chairman of the Board of Nomination, wrote to Dr Bruce in the following terms:—

“ I have much pleasure in informing you that the Board of Nomination has, after full consideration, unanimously agreed that you shall be proposed for the Moderator's chair at the coming Synod in April. I have no shadow of doubt that the Synod will with equal cordiality make the appointment, and I trust that, through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, you will have strength for, and comfort in, the chair.”

Dr Bruce, in answer to this letter, expressed his willingness, if elected by the Synod to the office of Moderator, to discharge its duties to the best of his ability.

On the 25th April 1881, when the Synod met at Newcastle, the Rev. Dr Fraser stated that

the Board of Nomination had thought right to consult the Presbytery of Newcastle upon the nomination of a Moderator, and that that Presbytery had unanimously resolved to recommend the name of a rev. Father who had long resided in Newcastle and who had attained the confidence and esteem of the community, and that the Board of Nomination had adopted their recommendation.

He might say, before mentioning the name, a certain objection or difficulty presented itself. The rev. Father had never held a pastoral charge or filled a theological chair, but the Nomination Board came to the conclusion that there were exceptional grounds in favour of the recommendation of the Presbytery of Newcastle. In the case before them the rev. gentleman he was about to name had been carefully trained in the ministry and had always been in close alliance with it, and he had made substantial proof of his powers as a preacher, and had always been identified with the movements of the church to which he belonged. The name of the gentleman he had to propose as Moderator was the Rev. John Collingwood Bruce, LL.D. In Dr Bruce they had a man of good parts, of prudence of character, of great learning, and, better still, possessed of a spirit of great devotion. He was besides an eminent antiquary, and yet alive to all the questions and duties of the present hour. He was a man rich in moral worth and zealous in good works. He was, moreover, the senior member of a family that deserved very well at their hands, and he was one who had long resided in this place and was well reported of, not only by the Presbyterian friends but of all the Christian people in the town and neighbourhood, and enjoyed immense respect throughout the northern community. He therefore moved that the Rev. Dr Bruce be elected Moderator.

The Rev. George Bell seconded the motion, which was carried with acclamation.

Dr Bruce then entered the hall, when he was re-



ceived with loud and continued applause, and being declared Moderator of the Synod proceeded to deliver his address.

The address so admirably illustrates the views with which Dr Bruce identified himself that copious extracts are added in an appendix to this chapter.

The duties of the Moderator's chair were discharged with an ability and readiness which greatly facilitated the despatch of business.

Among the numerous congratulations tendered to him on his appointment was the following address from the Session of Blackett Street Church, of which he was a member :—

“ We, your fellow-elders of the Blackett Street Presbyterian Church, beg to tender you our most cordial congratulations on your appointment as Moderator of Synod.

“ Your rich and varied intellectual gifts, your mature Christian graces, your obliging and kindly disposition, and the long, faithful, and efficient services which you have rendered to the Presbyterian Church and to the cause of Christ in general, appear to us to entitle you very fully to the position to which the Synod in its wisdom has raised you.”

At the conclusion of the Synod Dr Bruce wrote to his son Gainsford :—

“ NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 30th April 1881.

“ The Synod has passed off remarkably well. I have enjoyed it rather than been distressed or overworked by it. There was a solemn and religious feeling pervading the minds of the members most of the time, and though there

were two exciting debates there was scarcely a hasty word uttered. God was very gracious to us. I think every one was much pleased with it, and most people said that the Synods were getting better and better every time. You will be pleased with the result of the Disestablishment debate.<sup>1</sup> I send you to-day's 'Journal,' in which there is an article upon the subject.

"I am just setting off for Chesters. I have to be at the U.P. Synod in Edinburgh on Tuesday as a representative of the English Synod, but I shall return the same night.

"I invited the Synod to the Castle on Wednesday afternoon, and gave them tea there. They enjoyed it much."

In the year 1881 the Evangelical Society of Geneva held its Jubilee Meeting, and Dr Bruce, as the Moderator of the Presbyterian Church of England, was appointed by "the Committee on Intercourse with other Churches" to visit that town and express the sympathy of the Presbyterian Church of England with the work carried on by the Society. In pursuance of this appointment he proceeded to Geneva, and on the 23rd of June he addressed the Conference assembled in the Oratory there, and was heartily received. He spoke with force and vigour, and his address gave encouragement to the brethren.

According to the practice of the Church, the retiring Moderator preached the opening sermon at the succeeding Synod. In April 1882 the Synod met in Regent Square Church, London, and Dr Bruce

<sup>1</sup> Overtures were submitted in favour of Disestablishment. Mr George B. Bruce moved that it is inexpedient in the circumstances of this Church to go to any finding on the matter of Disestablishment.

Mr Bruce's motion was carried by a very large majority.

preached the opening sermon from Acts vii. 8 with his accustomed earnestness and power. After the Synod had been constituted Dr Bruce in a few graceful sentences expressed his sense of the honour done him by his appointment to the chair of the last Synod, and presented the proposal of the Board of Nomination, that the Rev. W. M'Caw of Manchester should be his successor in the chair. Dr Bruce thus formally terminated a year of service, during which he worthily maintained the dignity of the Moderator's office.

At the London Synod held in 1882 it was resolved, in the hope of quickening the religious life of the churches, to organise a visitation by ministers specially deputed by the Synod for that purpose. Dr Bruce and the Rev. Mr Fraser were appointed to visit all the churches of the Bristol Presbytery, including Plymouth, Torquay, and Swansea. Dr Bruce readily undertook the duty, although, as he expressed it in a letter dated the 27th of October, just before setting out on his journey, that he felt it a serious undertaking at that time of the year and at his time of life. The results were most encouraging; Dr Bruce and Mr Fraser were cordially received throughout their visitation. Writing on the 16th of November to his son Gainsford, Dr Bruce says:—

“I feel satisfied that the visit of Mr Fraser and myself to the churches was calculated to do much good. It made the outlying ones feel that they were thought of and cared for by their distant brethren. I think that they will be stimulated to attain a higher standard of spiritual life and Christian usefulness than hitherto. The ministers of the Presbytery seem to me without

exception to be of earnest piety and excellent ability. Some of them need encouraging. Some of the churches are really handsome buildings."

Mr Black, the secretary of the Presbyterian Church of England, on the 22nd of November wrote to Dr Bruce:—

"I am profoundly thankful for the success which has attended the launching of this most important movement, and for the gracious guidance which I believe led us in the selection of such instruments. I have a great deal to do, as you know, with guiding the ministration of the more secular side of the churches' work, but I have felt painfully and anxiously the need there is for the Synod looking deeper and exerting its influence in the more spiritual sphere. Hence I looked personally with more interest on this new departure than on anything with which I have had to do. And now I feel as if God were really looking down graciously on the movement. And I feel personally thankful to you for your invaluable assistance."

---

#### APPENDIX TO CHAPTER XVIII.

##### EXTRACTS FROM THE ADDRESS OF MODERATOR.

DEAR BRETHREN,—I thank you very heartily for the honour you have done me in elevating me to the position of Moderator of this Synod. At any other time or in any other place I should have shrunk from accepting the post. Meeting, however, as you do, for the first time in your united capacity of the Synod of the Presbyterian Church of England, in Newcastle, I felt

---

that it was fitting that some one closely associated with the locality should hold a prominent position among you, with the view of welcoming you to the place, and of aiding you in your deliberations.

It is more than fifty-one years since I received from the Presbytery of Newcastle the high commission, and a higher I do not covet, to preach to my fellow-sinners the everlasting gospel. That commission I have endeavoured to this day, though feebly and falteringly, to fulfil. For a considerable part of my life my ministry was chiefly exercised amongst the rising youth of the day—the men of the present generation. For many years I have been an elder of the Church. Such as I am, I am at your service; and in the name of the Presbyterians, nay, may I not say of the Christians, of the North of England, I bid you welcome to my native place—the town and county of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

Before noticing the topics which require your special attention, it may not be unprofitable to glance at some of the events of days gone by which have a peculiar interest to an assembly like this.

The village of Wycliffe, which is believed to have given birth to the “morning star” of the Reformation, is situated within the boundaries of the ancient Northumbria.

William Tyndale, who was honoured of God to give to the world the present English version of the Scriptures, belonged to a family hailing from Langley, on the banks of the Tyne.

For two years Berwick-upon-Tweed was the scene of the labours of that eminent servant of God, John Knox, and for two years subsequently—namely, from 1551-1553—he exercised his ministry in Newcastle. He occupied the pulpit of the principal church of the town, St Nicholas. It was in Newcastle, and in the church of St Nicholas, that he was called upon to appear before the Council of the North and to give a reason why he affirmed the mass to be idolatry. The prayer which he breathed when commencing his defence is one which every member of this Synod would do well to remember when called on to act for the Master: “O Lord Eternal, move and govern my tongue to speak the verity, and the hearts of Thy people to understand and obey the same.”

May I mention another pillar of Christ's Church belonging to this locality? Nicholas Ridley, “hailing of a stock right worshipful,” was born upon the banks of the South Tyne, and “learned his grammar with great dexterity in Newcastle, whence he was removed to the University of Cambridge.” I

need not remind you how marvellously his mind was enlightened by the Holy Spirit of God. Hear his definition of the "Church of England." "By the Church of England I mean the congregation of the true chosen children of God in this realm of England." Little did he think that after the lapse of three centuries the children of God in this realm would be divided into so many distinct, and to some extent discordant, sections!

I need not remind you of Bernard Gilpin, the Apostle of the North, who perilled his life in preaching the gospel to the borderers, and was only saved from martyrdom by the timely death of Queen Mary.

I dare not dwell upon so inviting a field as the state of religion in England under the administration of Oliver the Protector. No one who reviews this portion of our country's history can help regretting that the good men of the Episcopalian, the Presbyterian, and Independent persuasions had not exercised more charitable views towards each other. It was the divisions that existed amongst both the political and religious parties of the day which encouraged Charles I. to reject all the peaceable proposals which were made to him. How easily, too, might a pure and reformed church have been established in England in Cromwell's days but for the jealousy existing between the Presbyterians and Independents. The Presbyterians regarded Cromwell as a regicide and usurper; this threw him into the hands of the Independents, and the Presbyterians resented the favour shown to that comparatively small party.

In due time Episcopacy was re-established, and the prayer-book, altered only in a few particulars, and that in a way to render it more distasteful than before to the Puritan party, was reimposed. In addition to this, every incumbent was compelled to give in the presence of his congregation "his unfeigned assent and consent to all and every thing contained and prescribed in and by the book intituled, The Book of Common Prayer." Not a single suggestion that was made by the Puritan party was listened to. Many were willing to state that they approved of it on the whole and would engage to use it, who could not give a spontaneous and conscientious adhesion to every statement contained in it; even these were not listened to. As a consequence, nearly two thousand rectors and vicars were compelled to relinquish their parishes for conscience' sake. Further austerities followed; the ministers, though loyal to the throne and devoted to the doctrinal tenets of the Church, were driven

from their charges, without a home and the means of subsistence. They were not permitted to reside within five miles of a town, where they might hope by some means to earn a living for their starving families; and they were forbidden, under the severest penalties, to preach in private houses to their scattered flocks. No one could hold any civil office of importance without taking the sacrament according to the Church ritual. The whole community were commanded under serious penalties to attend their parish churches, no matter what the character of the officiating minister might be. The jails of the land were filled with persons guilty of the infraction of these unrighteous laws.

Newcastle felt the desolating effect of the Act of Uniformity. "In consequence of it," says M'Kenzie in his 'History of Newcastle,' "Mr Samuel Hammond was ejected from the Vicarage, Mr William Durant was expelled from the lectureship of All Saints, and Mr Henry Leaver from the lectureship of St John's."

It is curious to notice the havoc made in the Church of Christ by the Act of Uniformity in the North of England, as manifested even at the present day, in the structural condition of many of our Northumbrian churches. Mr Wilson, a well-known architect, in his book upon 'The Churches of the Archdeaconry of Lindisfarne,' has the following passage: "The Act of Supremacy and the Act of Uniformity driving these Puritans, eventually, to secede from the New Protestant Church; and the Presbyterians gradually assuming the form of another large party; the parish churches deserted alike by the Puritans, Presbyterians, and Catholics, appear to have been but thinly attended. Persecutions and prosecutions failed too to refill them. Some of the parish churches in the Archdeaconry of Lindisfarne bear constructional witness to this falling away of attendance. They were reduced in size. The chapels of ease were often not used at all and allowed to fall; many parish churches were left so long without repairs that it was considered expedient to take them down altogether, in the last century, when they were replaced by the plainest structures, built on a smaller scale without chancels, and lighted with sash windows."

The attempt of James II. to re-establish Romanism in the land united, by a common sense of danger, the two great religious parties for a time, and schemes of comprehension suddenly became popular. With the fall of James their mutual fears departed and their old jealousies revived. An act toler-

ating Dissenters was passed, but the Act of Uniformity and the Test and Corporation Acts remained in full force.

For more than a century religion was at a very low ebb in England. Most of the Presbyterians during this period, still dreaming of a time when Parliament would repent of its ways and open the door for their admission to the Church, failed to carry out with any degree of energy the Presbyterian polity; their congregations became practically independent, doctrinal error crept into their pulpits unrebuked, and eventually Socinianism became synonymous with Presbyterianism.

God in His mercy was pleased, in His own time, to pour out His Spirit upon both Conformists and Nonconformists, and especially to raise up those two valiant soldiers of the cross, John Wesley and George Whitfield; at that period, and in a great measure by their instrumentality, a great revival took place in the land.

One of the subordinate results of that revival has been the removal of many of the disabilities under which Nonconformists laboured. Let me notice some of those which have taken place since I became interested in public affairs.

In 1829 the Test and Corporation Acts were repealed, and the observance of the Lord's Supper ceased to be "a pick-lock to a place." Newcastle has largely profited by the repeal of this Act, and many able men have served it in corporate offices who would otherwise have been disqualified. When St Nicholas' Church was reopened in 1877 by Bishop Baring, after the recent alterations, the Corporation pew was occupied by twenty-two members of the municipal body; of these the majority were Nonconformists, amongst them being the mayor, the ex-mayor, and the sheriff. The mayor and sheriff of the present year are both consistent Nonconformists.

More recently the terms of subscription required of the ministers of the church have been considerably relaxed: instead of the "unfeigned assent and consent to all and every thing" contained in the Book of Common Prayer, he is now only required to affirm—"I assent to the thirty-nine articles of religion and to the Book of Common Prayer, and of the ordering of bishops, priests, and deacons, . . . and I will use the form in the said book prescribed, and none other," &c.

If the spirit which dictated this alteration had prevailed at the Savoy Conference, the secession of the two thousand would in all probability have been prevented, and the unity of the Church of Christ in England been to a great extent preserved.

The exclusion of Nonconformists from the universities was a



cruel hardship, but that exists no longer. I trust that our rising youth will speedily and largely avail themselves of the advantages which these time-honoured seats of learning confer.

So many changes having occurred so recently and so rapidly, it is impossible to say what may yet be in store for us.

In the Church Conference which took place in Durham in October last, the Bishop spoke of the Dissenters as being not the antagonists but the allies of the Church in its crusade against the infidel section of the community. Let us reciprocate the kindly feeling, and be forward in recognising as brothers all who love the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. We are all soldiers under the banner of our great Captain. Let us fight side by side against the common foe until all God's enemies are brought to the foot of the cross.

One of the best ways of overcoming that pride which is at the bottom of all our denominational antipathies is for Christians to engage together, irrespective of their sectional peculiarities, in working for the common Master. It is surprising how, in such circumstances, the barriers which once separated us fall down of their own accord, and how our hearts are knit together in love and mutual admiration, not only in spite of, but almost because of, our former estrangement.

In welcoming you, brethren, to Newcastle, I must not forget to remind you that the pioneer of Mission-work in China—a work in which we as a Church have so largely and successfully engaged—was a Newcastle man. Robert Morrison was born in Morpeth, but at the age of three years he came to this town, where in due time he worked at his father's business, that of a last-maker. He belonged to a Presbyterian congregation which at that time worshipped in the High Bridge. He went out single-handed to cope with a nationality supposed to consist of one-third of the inhabitants of the earth. "Mr Morrison," said the captain of the vessel in which he embarked for Canton, "do you really expect that you will make an impression upon the idolatry of the great Chinese empire?" "No, sir," was Morrison's reply, "but I expect God will." And God has.

Let me close this reference to the past by giving the names of two or three ministers who, along with many others, sustained the Presbyterian cause in this district, and placed it untarnished in our hands. Jonathan Harle was a native of Newcastle, and a pupil of the famous Dr Gilpin. He laboured in Morpeth and Alnwick, and lies buried in the chancel of St Michael's Church at Alnwick. John Horsley, also a native of Newcastle, was an intimate friend of Harle's, and succeeded

him in his church at Morpeth. He was the author of the 'Britannia Romana,' a book on British antiquities of vast importance. The Rev. William Graham was for thirty years minister of the Close congregation, which is now represented by the Blackett Street congregation. He was the author of the work entitled 'A Review of the Ecclesiastical Establishments of Europe,' a work to which much attention has been drawn of late. And, lastly, let me name the Rev. James Pringle, minister of the congregation now worshipping in Westmorland Road, whose life-long labours in Newcastle have laid me and a multitude of others still living under the deepest obligations.

We may now revert to our own denominational affairs. Notwithstanding many adverse circumstances, God has blessed us as a Church during the year. The Sustentation Fund, though not without a struggle, has been brought up to the required amount. The affairs of the College have been conducted with greater efficiency than ever before, and the sum devoted to its maintenance has been increased. On the whole, we have reason to thank God and to take courage.

But we must aim at greater things. I trust that there is a great future before us as a Church; but we shall fall short of our important mission unless we one and all, whatever our position in the Church be, give ourselves unreservedly to the work of winning souls. If we are Christians, we must bear fruit.

I trust and pray that, in addition to the discharge of our ecclesiastical business, our present meeting may be the means of advancing the divine life in each of us, and that at the close of the Synod we shall return to our several spheres of duty quickened, sanctified, and made more meet for the Master's use.

One thing presses sorely upon my spirit. A great part—probably the greater part—of the people of this Christian country make no profession of religion. They are either opposed to the blessed realities of divine revelation altogether, or they give no heed to them. Are we as a Church putting forth those strenuous and self-denying efforts which the exigency of the case demands? I fear not. God is as willing to bless us now as he was in the early ages of the Church. Then the poor simple followers of Jesus scattered abroad by persecution went hither and thither preaching the Word. How wonderfully they were blessed!

God is pouring out His Spirit upon the people of this land now, and He is blessing to a very large extent the labours of what I may call the irregular forces of the Christian army. I

have watched the fruit of these efforts, and I have seen many precious souls gathered into the fold of Christ who have given witness by a holy walk and conversation to the reality of the change which has taken place upon them. These efforts, as they are not Church organisations, cannot hold their converts together. The rescued ones go hither and thither in search of sealing ordinances, and so are to a considerable extent lost sight of by their early friends.

The Church of England is rising up to a sense of its duty in this respect, and may God bless her in her efforts. Are we to stand still, or are we to cast the net on the right side of the ship and draw to the shore a multitude of fishes?

In order to succeed in this work, it seems to be desirable to set apart to the work of evangelisation some earnest, zealous labourers, drawn from the class of people among whom they are to labour. When converts are gained, the sacraments might be dispensed among them by some duly constituted minister; and over them, when a congregation has been formed, a duly educated pastor might be placed.

According to our usual arrangements, men of the class of John Bunyan and Charles Spurgeon are excluded from our pulpits. A course of study, extending over six years, is required of our preachers. It often happens that a young man who at the age of twenty or twenty-one has come under the power of religion wishes to devote himself to the work of the ministry. He is too old to commence the study of the learned languages and of philosophy, or perhaps he has not the means of maintaining himself for the required period. He is either diverted from his purpose altogether, or he betakes himself to other communities where the terms of entrance are not so severe. Surely some means might be found by which, in consistency with the maintenance of the scholarship of the ministry, this source of power might be utilised.

And now, brethren, I must draw my address to a close.

I have adverted to the troublous times of Charles the First and Second, and have asked you to observe how piteous it was that the good men of that period who were united upon essentials—the doctrinal articles of the Church of England being in perfect accordance with the Confession of Faith—could not unite in framing an order of church polity in which all could agree. Let us take warning and do what we can to heal the wounds of the poor afflicted church of Christ. As Baxter says, “All cry up unity and yet very few do anything to promote it.” That good man from his own experience gives us some good

advice upon this subject. "Own no man's errors or sins," says he, "but own every man that owneth Christ and whom Christ will own. . . . Bear with those that Christ will bear with; especially learn the master-duty of self-denial; for it is self that is the greatest enemy to catholicism."

Let us encourage one another to "put on Christ"—to be "conformed" to his "image." Let us remember that the eyes of our brethren of other denominations are resting upon us hopefully, and that the eyes of an ungodly world are turned to us also, watching for our fall. May it be made evident by our holy demeanour that God is with us and is working by us for the furtherance of His kingdom. In the course of our discussions a diversity of view will necessarily be expressed, for at best we do but feel after the truth, but let us speak what we believe to be the truth in love, and may the result of our deliberations be the advancement of God's cause in this sinful world, and the hastening on of the latter-day glory.

## CHAPTER XIX.

1866, ELECTED PRESIDENT OF TYNESIDE NATURALISTS' FIELD CLUB — 1869, ENTERS HIS YOUNGER SON AT WESTMINSTER SCHOOL — 1879, EXCAVATIONS AT BINCHESTER — 1880, AT LINCOLN HILL DURING THE SPRING — ATTENDS MEETING OF ARCHÆOLOGICAL INSTITUTE AT LINCOLN — VISIT TO ALNWICK IN NOVEMBER — 1882, UNIVERSITY OF DURHAM CONFERS DEGREE OF D.C.L. — ATTENDS MEETING OF ARCHÆOLOGICAL INSTITUTE AT CARLISLE — 1883, APPOINTED RHIND LECTURER — VISIT TO ROME — SPEECH DURING NEWCASTLE ELECTION — CELEBRATES GOLDEN WEDDING.

DR BRUCE took an interest in the proceedings of the Natural History Society of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and in the meetings of the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club, and he was always glad when an opportunity offered to vary his literary labours by taking a run into the country with the Field Club. The following letter to his wife refers to one of these rambles :—

“NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 28th June 1867.

“On Wednesday I went to Hexham with the Field Club. We had a very hard day of it. We walked about fifteen miles without stopping, chiefly in the beds and on the banks of rivers. The scenery of Dipton Burn and the Devil's Water was magnificent, but we had not time to enjoy it, for, although we raced as if we had been riding a steeplechase, we did not reach Corbridge, where dinner was ready for us at five o'clock, until six o'clock. None of us knew

the way or anything about the country. However, when we had had our dinner we laughed at the whole affair and thought it great fun. I never saw finer scenery or a greater profusion of wild-flowers. I confess I was glad you were not with me; we must have crossed the streams innumerable times, and sometimes we had to climb very high banks, and get through very difficult hedges, and traverse ploughed fields."

He was elected President of the Tyneside Naturalists' Field Club for the year 1866-1867, and on the 9th of May 1867 he delivered an address as President, reviewing the various field meetings of the year, and concluding with a graceful notice of the late Mr Joshua Alder, an active member of the Natural History Society, who during his life had been a diligent student of the British mollusca, and who was justly regarded as a high authority on that branch of natural history.

In January 1869 he went to London to enter his younger son at Westminster School. He says in a letter to his wife, 23rd January 1869:—

"I had a pleasant interview with Mr Marshall yesterday, the house master to whom John is to go, and arranged everything."

In the expeditions he made to examine Roman inscribed stones he often found inscriptions of value exposed to wind and weather and uncared for. In a letter written by him to Mr Clayton on 9th October 1873 he says:—

"SLATERFIELD, 9th October 1873.

"There is a matter I should like to bring to Lord Lonsdale's attention. It grieves me to

see Roman altars and other sculptures scattered throughout Cumberland and Westmorland exposed to the weather and in danger of destruction.

"On Monday I visited Wigton to examine the stones found at Old Carlisle that are still in that vicinity. At Wigton Hall, recently the residence of Miss Aglionby, now occupied by a schoolmaster, there are several inscriptions. The schoolmaster said to me when we were looking at them together, 'These ought to be at Lowther Castle,' and I thought so too. Already I miss two of the smaller objects; by-and-by they may all disappear. Could not Miss Aglionby's permission be obtained to remove them to Lowther? There is a unique altar (to Bellona) in the garden of the Red Dial public-house, a mile or so out of Wigton: when I saw it the other day it was obscured by nettles. I think that might be secured for Lowther."

In a letter from Alnwick, 16th November 1879, to his son Gainsford, he says:—

"I was at Bishop Auckland last Saturday to see the excavations at Binchester, the Vinovium of the Romans. The new Bishop (Dr Lightfoot), hearing that I was to be there, joined us in the inspection. He is a very agreeable man.

"On account of a meeting of the Newcastle Bible Society on the 28th inst., I shall not be able to go to Brighton till the 29th."

The next letter to his son Gainsford indicates his engagements at the beginning of the year 1880.

*"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 25th January 1880.*

"I shall have a very busy week this week. I am to write the report of the Antiquarian Society, to lecture at South Shields on Monday night and at Allendale Town on Tuesday night, attend an antiquarian meeting at Mr Clayton's house on Tuesday at noon, and the anniversary of the Antiquarian Society at the Castle at one o'clock on Wednesday, &c."

At Easter 1880 Dr and Mrs Bruce were at Lincoln Hill, where they usually went in the spring for rest and change. The quiet of this place, and the beauty of the vale of the North Tyne, afforded them great enjoyment. Dr Bruce always came into Newcastle on Wednesday to attend the Infirmary Committee, and brought with him a store of flowers for the singing band to distribute among the patients. An additional source of pleasure was the proximity of Lincoln Hill to The Chesters, where Dr Bruce would frequently resort to confer with his friend Mr Clayton, and watch the progress of the excavations which from time to time were carried on at the Roman station of Cilurnum.

In the summer and autumn of this year he wrote to his son Gainsford :—

*"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 22nd July 1880.*

"I preached in our Presbyterian Church in York last Sunday. The congregations were small. I stayed with a very pleasant family of the name of J——. Monday forenoon I spent with Canon Raine and a gentleman of the name of Holmes in the York Museum, and in the



evening I went with Mr Holmes to his residence in the neighbourhood of Leeds, where I stayed all night. He has a considerable collection of antiquarian objects, which I examined. The next day we went both of us to visit another gentleman in the neighbourhood of Ilkley of the name of Fison; in his company we examined a number of rocks on which are circular markings like those in Northumberland. We afterwards dined with him, and I came home the same night.

"On Tuesday I go to Lincoln to attend the yearly meeting of the Archæological Institute. I am to be the guest of Canon Harvey. From Lincoln I go to Cambridge, meaning to return home on Wednesday week. I got on very well with the Bishop of Durham; he was very pleasant. I showed him as much as possible in the short time he allowed himself."

"LINCOLN, 1st August 1880.

"I came here last Tuesday. I have been attending the meetings of the Archæological Institute here, and I go to Cambridge to-morrow. I am due at Newcastle on Wednesday at noon.

"I have enjoyed my visit to this place a good deal, but at my time of life things do not wear the gloss they once did.

"I heard the Bishop of Lincoln (Dr Wordsworth) preach in the Cathedral this morning. He took for his subject Antiochus Epiphanes and Judas Maccabæus. I listened to the sermon with great interest, as I have lately studied the subject."

"ALNWICK CASTLE, 9th November 1880.

"I came here last Friday and stay till to-morrow (Wednesday) at noon. Lord Salisbury is here with his wife and two daughters, and several other people. He and others here are very anxious to know what the present Ministry will say at the Mansion House to-night. There will be a great rush at the 'Journal' to-morrow morning. Rutland has been several days engaged in setting my library in order and relieving it of 'rubbish.' He finds several valuable books in it. I am putting all yours to one side; you may wish to have them bound and made ready to put in your new house. Some of them have greatly increased in value since they were bought."

In June 1882 Dr Bruce received an intimation that the University of Durham proposed to confer upon him the degree of D.C.L. at the Convocation to be held in celebration of the fiftieth anniversary of the foundation of the University. He appreciated their kindness and was glad to accept the honour.

On the 27th of June he attended the Convocation and received the degree of D.C.L., which was conferred in the following form. Professor Farrer, speaking to the Warden, said :—

"I present to you Dr Collingwood Bruce, the literary hero of the Roman Wall, the learned archæologist of whom the North is so justly proud, a devoted minister of religion in another community than our own, who merits our respect not more by the unity of literary sympathy than

by the bond of a common Christianity, and a common devotion to the happiness of man."

The Warden, addressing Dr Bruce, said :—

"You have devoted no small period of a life-time to the illustration of our local history, and therefore we have a patriotic interest in receiving you as one of our members to-day as Doctor of Civil Law."

The following letter is to his son :—

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 29th July 1882.

"I paid a visit to the British Museum to get information about a beautiful gem which has been discovered at Cilurnum. I go on Monday to Carlisle to attend the meeting of the Archæological Institute there. I am to be the guest of the Bishop of Carlisle at Rose Castle, a few miles out of the city. It unfortunately happens that the Bishop of Newcastle is to be enthroned in Newcastle next Thursday, and there is to be a luncheon in the Town Hall after the service at which the Duke of Northumberland is to preside, and also a *conversazione* in the evening. I feel I must come in for these gatherings or my absence would be misunderstood."

In January 1883 Dr Bruce received an invitation to be the Rhind lecturer for that year. The lectures were to be six in number. The first one was to be delivered on the 15th of October, and the course was to be completed in a fortnight. The subject was "The Roman occupation of Britain." Dr Bruce at first hesitated to undertake the duty. He consulted

his friend Mr Clayton, and received from him this letter :—

“THE CHESTERS, 15th January 1883.

“I have received this morning your letter of yesterday and its enclosure which I now return.

“I feel strongly that you must accept the invitation.

“If you are not equal to the subject no one else can be, and it is so congenial to your tastes and so near akin to the other objects receiving your attention that the difficulty of the task will not be felt by you.”

Thus encouraged he undertook the work, and devoted a great portion of his time in 1883 to the preparation of the lectures. In February he paid a visit to Rome. Eleanor, Dowager-Duchess of Northumberland, was in Rome at the time, and her Grace afforded him facilities for visiting many of the interesting places in the city, which he greatly appreciated.

On hearing that a vacancy had occurred in the representation of Newcastle in the House of Commons, and that his son Gainsford had been selected to contest the seat in the interest of the Conservative party, he left Rome hurriedly on the 19th of February in order to reach Newcastle before the polling-day. Mr John Morley was the Liberal candidate. Dr Bruce, although brought up in Whig traditions, was strongly opposed to the views of Mr Morley. At a great meeting at the Circus, presided over by Mr N. G. Clayton, on the 23rd of February 1883, Dr Bruce had an enthusiastic reception, and spoke as follows :—

"I do not appear on this platform as a politician. My life hitherto, if I may venture to say it, has been devoted to higher objects than those which our great and honoured statesmen pursue. I have sought to promote the individual, the general, and the spiritual welfare of this great community.

"Perhaps I may be excused for saying that I appear here to-night as the father of the gentleman who has addressed you as a candidate for your suffrages, and even those who oppose his candidature will excuse me if I say that in my father's heart I wish him success. Putting politics aside, I feel there is a question arising above all other questions of the day that is involved in this election. I do not want to enter upon it. I have risen to propose a vote of thanks to our chairman which is most highly due. His introductory speech was listened to with great attention by this great multitude, and he has now brought this meeting to a satisfactory close, the result of which we shall see on Saturday next."

The hopes that were entertained for the success of Mr Gainsford Bruce's candidature were, however, disappointed. Mr Morley was returned by a large majority, a number of the Nonconformists giving him their support. Having regard to the question then agitating the country concerning the solemn obligation imposed by the Parliamentary oath known as the Bradlaugh Question, Dr Bruce found it difficult to account for the action of many of his Nonconformist friends with whom he had been accustomed

to act in religious matters. He took an active part in promoting petitions against the Affirmation Bill brought in by Mr Gladstone, because he considered that the bill was not introduced to remove any general grievance, but simply to meet the emergency arising out of the conduct of Mr Bradlaugh.

During the year he paid several visits to The Chesters, where he met among other persons the Archbishop of York and Mr Justice Day.

On the 20th of June 1883 Dr and Mrs Bruce celebrated their golden wedding. There was a great family gathering on the occasion. They received congratulations from a large number of friends, not only in Newcastle but throughout the country. Professor Hübner, the celebrated German antiquary, sent a very cordial letter of congratulation. The employees at the printing-office of Messrs Andrew Reid presented an illuminated address, and the ladies of the Infirmary singing band gave a bouquet and a beautiful bowl, and a congratulatory address. The Duchess of Northumberland sent a tastefully carved oak fire-screen ornamented with golden-coloured dried flowers, the carving having been designed and executed under the care of Mr Brown, the superintendent of the School of Carving at Alnwick established by the fourth Duke.

The following letter from the Duchess accompanied the gift :—

"2 GROSVENOR PLACE, *June 18th.*

"MY DEAR DR BRUCE,—I heard that the 20th of this month would be the fiftieth anniversary of your wedding-day, and I hope you and Mrs Bruce will kindly accept a little offer-

ing in honour of your golden wedding that I have had very great pleasure in preparing for you, in the shape of a screen covered with the most golden flowers I could find, and framed by Mr Brown, who has taken the warmest interest in designing and ornamenting the frame for it.

“Pray accept our most hearty congratulations to you both and truest wishes that many blessed years may yet be granted to you in this life, even if it may be till He come to take His bride to Himself, when those who have in holy Christian marriage been made one in spirit in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost will be one for ever with each other in Him and with Him, serving Him in joy unspeakable and full of glory.—Believe me, dear Dr and Mrs Bruce, your sincere and affectionate friend,

“L. NORTHUMBERLAND.”

Mr Clayton wrote a congratulatory letter to Dr Bruce in the following terms :—

“THE CHESTERS, 20th June 1883.

“MY DEAR DR BRUCE,—I cannot allow this 20th day of June to pass without offering to you and Mrs Bruce my sincere congratulations on the completion of half a century of a happy married life. You have escaped a drawback which is not unusual—namely, anxiety as to the prospects of your children. Your only daughter made a happy marriage; your eldest son, by his talents and energy, has won a

position attained by few, and which will ultimately place him at the head of his profession; and your youngest son, by means of industrious habits and a trusty and honourable character, is gradually advancing in the pursuit to which he has been brought up. For all these earthly blessings we are indebted to the Divine Disposer of events.—I remain, always most truly yours,

“JOHN CLAYTON.”

The following verses were composed by a friend of Dr and Mrs Bruce, and were printed in golden type and distributed among the guests who attended the celebration :—

“All hail, dear Doctor, we rejoice to pay  
Our welcome on thy golden nuptial day,  
Which binds anew two lives, whose hopes and fears  
Now hold their jubilee of wedded years.

Blessed hast thou been in health and length of days,  
Time hath adorned thee with its choicest bays,  
A wreath of well-spent years, the honoured crown  
Of life-long labours gilded with renown.

The gifts of culture and thy learned fame  
Unite to throw a lustre round thy name;  
On Roman Britain's storied page sublime  
Thou'lt leave thy footsteps on the sands of time.

O sage and Christian! Christian more than sage,  
Beloved of youth, still more revered by age,  
May thou and thy dear helpmeet hand in hand  
Be gently led towards the Better Land.

May Heaven around thy pathway never cease  
To cast the cheering rays of joy and peace;  
As thou hast sown in deeds of Christian love,  
May it be thine to reap in realms above.”

J. H.



In October 1883 Dr Bruce delivered the Rhind Lectures in the Masonic Hall, Edinburgh. The first lecture dealt with the two campaigns of Julius Cæsar. The second lecture dealt with the campaigns of Agricola, the advent of Hadrian to Britain, and the coming of Severus and his sons. The third lecture spoke of the motives for the occupation of Britain by the Romans and the works of the Romans in Britain. The fourth lecture was devoted to a description of the wall from the Tyne to the Solway, and discussed the question, "Who built it?" In the fifth lecture the wall of the Upper Isthmus was described, and the mythology of the Romans considered, and the question discussed whether there were any signs in Britain of the reception of Christianity. The sixth lecture spoke of military inscriptions, diplomas of citizenship, and the results of Roman occupation.

Dr Bruce was much gratified with his reception and by the interest exhibited by the audiences.

## CHAPTER XX.

1884, DR BRUCE'S RIGHT TO TAKE THE MARRIAGE SERVICE IN PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES DULY LICENSED FOR MARRIAGES AFFIRMED—1885, THE CIRCULATION BY THE LITERARY AND PHILOSOPHICAL SOCIETY OF BOOKS HAVING AN INFIDEL TENDENCY OBJECTED TO BY DR BRUCE—LETTER TO HIS SON AFTER TYNESIDE ELECTION—1888, PREACHES IN BLACKETT STREET CHURCH A SERMON ON THE 25TH ANNIVERSARY OF THE MINISTRY OF MR LEITCH—KEEPS UP INTEREST IN NORTHUMBERLAND SMALL-PIPES—LETTER TO HIS ELDEST SON ON HIS ENTERING THE HOUSE OF COMMONS AS MEMBER FOR HOLBORN—1890, READS BEFORE THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES OF NEWCASTLE OBITUARY NOTICE OF MR CLAYTON — STEPS TAKEN TO COMPLETE HODGSON'S HISTORY OF NORTHUMBERLAND—1891, SPEAKS AT A MEETING OF THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES IN SUPPORT OF A MOTION OF CONDOLENCE WITH THE DUKE OF NORTHUMBERLAND ON THE DEATH OF THE DUCHESS—TEMPORARY ILLNESS OF DR BRUCE.

It frequently happened that friends who had been engaged with Dr Bruce in religious or philanthropic work asked him to take the service at their weddings in Presbyterian churches, and this he was pleased to do. After he had followed this practice for more than twenty years without any objection having been made, the Rev. J. B. Meharry (now Dr Meharry), without giving any notice to Dr Bruce, brought forward a motion in the Newcastle Presbytery on the 7th of October 1884, asking the Presbytery to disapprove of Dr Bruce's action, solely because he was not the ordained minister of a charge. The motion was rejected by the Presbytery, and their action

was promptly affirmed by the Synod, to which the mover unadvisedly appealed. Although Dr Bruce took no public notice of the matter, he shortly afterwards expressed his views to one of the ministers of the Presbytery in the letter which follows:—

“I have long wished to thank you for your kindness in defending me in the Presbytery when Mr Meharry proposed that I should be censured for presuming to perform the marriage service, but I have lacked opportunity. It might be supposed that the occasion to which Mr Meharry referred was the only occasion on which I had officiated at a marriage service. For at least twenty years, probably thirty, I have done so whenever there was occasion for it. No one ever hinted to me that I was acting unbecomingly.

“I do not aspire to the dignity of being the minister of a particular congregation. It is enough for me that half a century ago I was commissioned by the Newcastle Presbytery to preach the everlasting Gospel, and that at fitting times and in multitudes of places I have by God's grace done so.

“I wish it to be distinctly understood that in conducting the marriage service I had no idea of assuming rights which do not belong to a humble preacher of the Gospel.

“The way in which Mr Meharry introduced the business strikes me as strange. To this hour he has had no communication with me upon the subject. The evening newspaper of the day on which he first introduced the subject

before the public had been brought to my house, containing a report of the proceedings of the Presbytery headed with a notice in large letters, 'Proposal to censure Dr Bruce,' before I had the least idea that I was to be made the subject of attack. Mr Meharry is a young man,—long may it be before he experiences the infirmities of age,—but if he had thought of the claims of age he would have lessened the shock occasioned me by giving me some notice of his intention to bring my conduct under the review of the Presbytery and thus under the notice of the public at large.

"I come now to the question more immediately under discussion—May an elder or may a licensed preacher who has not been set apart to the charge of a particular congregation perform the marriage service? And here we must consider the nature of the service as it is performed in our Nonconformist places of worship. When I was married (in the year 1833), marriages could only be lawfully performed in the parish churches of the land. Shortly afterwards, however, the present law was passed enabling nonconforming ministers to perform the marriage ceremony in licensed places of worship in the presence of a registrar appointed by the State.

"Some ministers chafe at the idea of the registrar being present when they conduct the marriage service. For my part, I do not object to the presence of a registrar. It is the bounden duty of the State to see to the legal performance of the marriages which take place in the land and to keep a careful register of

them. But it may be asked, Why is a registrar not required when a marriage is performed in a parish church? The ministers of the Established Church are, as far as marriages are concerned, regarded as State officials, and they are subject to penalties if they conduct a marriage in an improper way.

"Since, then, in our Nonconformist Churches the State takes upon itself the charge of seeing that the marriage is conducted in accordance with the laws of the land, all that the Church has to do is to see that so important a step is not taken in a light and thoughtless manner and without seeking the blessing of Almighty God. The Church enjoins upon persons entering on the contract of marriage the duty of publicly seeking the blessing of God upon their new and interesting relationship.

"In most cases the contracting parties will desire the services of their own minister, but there seems to be no reason in the nature of things why any Christian man of good repute should not officiate on the occasion. The truth is, the bride and the bridegroom are married not by the officiating minister but by themselves: they say the words which constitute the contract."

In September 1885 a question arose respecting the circulation by the Literary and Philosophical Society of books having an infidel tendency, which gave great concern to Dr Bruce. He regarded the library of the Literary and Philosophical Society as a great educational agency, where young men might resort to instruct their minds with pure and

elevating literature, and he was much distressed to find that books which he considered were calculated to lead the uninformed mind to take a false view concerning the truths of religion were being circulated by the Society. A rule of the Society prohibited the purchase of books on "controversial divinity," but some autobiographies and books of travel containing skilfully framed attacks on the Christian religion, which Dr Bruce considered quite as mischievous as works of a professedly infidel character, were circulated by the Society. He thought that such books, if not within the letter, were within the spirit of the rule, and that the committee ought to exercise its discretion by withdrawing them from circulation.

He wrote to Dr Spence Watson, one of the secretaries of the Society, on this subject.

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 5th Sept. 1885.

"MY DEAR DR WATSON,—A matter of the utmost importance requires the immediate and very serious attention of the committee of the Literary and Philosophical Society—it is the gross violation of the 34th rule of the institution, which says: 'The purchase of books on controversial divinity . . . shall be prohibited.' I am sorry I shall be from home all next week, and so shall not be able to attend the committee on Tuesday. It will be enough, however, if you will kindly bring the matter before them; it will not brook delay.

"The other day a gentleman brought me a book which he had got out of the library. He said it was of so infidel a character that he did not dare to read it. I looked into it, and I

felt the force of John Wesley's observation, that 'it does not do for a man to try how much poison he can bear.' The book is an autobiography. There are six copies of it in the library, procured from Mudie. I hear that they have been extensively circulated. I quote one passage from it, which occurs on pp. 12 and 13.

"I read several other passages, but they are of so seductive, so dangerous and painful a character, that I cannot pollute my mind by copying them. There is but one course which the committee can pursue, and that is to return at once all the copies of the book to Mudie.

"I feel assured that you and the rest of the committee will act with decision in this tremendously important matter.—I am, my dear Dr Watson, yours faithfully,

"J. COLLINGWOOD BRUCE."

Dr Watson replied—

"141 PILGRIM STREET, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,  
15th Oct. 1885.

"DEAR DR BRUCE,—Yours of the 5th ult. has been before the Committee of the Literary and Philosophical Society at their two last meetings, and has been carefully considered. The majority of those present could not agree with you, that the 34th rule (now, I think, the 26th rule) of the institution had been violated. From the statements made by those present who knew the book, it appeared that it was not a 'work on controversial divinity.'

"I deeply regret the pain which this has given

you; the whole question which you raise is a difficult and a troubling one, but I cannot but adopt the view which Milton so stoutly upholds in his *Areopagitica*: 'Truth needs no artificial aids, and Error is not the most dangerous when the most outspoken.'—Yours faithfully,

"ROBERT SPENCE WATSON."

Dr Bruce was not satisfied that the principles which Milton applied in favour of unlicensed printing governed the question he had raised. He thought that many a tongue

"could make the worse appear  
The better reason, to perplex and dash  
Maturest counsels,"

and he wrote the following letter in answer to Dr Watson:—

"BRIGHTON, 16th October 1885.

"DEAR DR WATSON,—I have here to-day received your letter of yesterday, in which you state that the Committee of the Literary and Philosophical Society did not think that the circulation of the book of which I complained in my communication of the 5th ult. was inconsistent with the rules of the institution.

"I am extremely surprised and grieved at this. No book ever came under my observation so calculated to do damage to the highest interests of all who may peruse it—especially the young.

"The matter cannot rest with the decision of the majority of the committee.

"I do not see how any one making a profession of Christianity can support a society



which circulates books of this character under the name of general literature.

"At my age the task of bringing the subject before the members of the Society will be a heavy, almost a crushing one; but if no one else will do it, I fear I must.

"Unless my sense of duty should undergo a change, I shall give notice at the monthly meeting of the Society in November that this important question will be brought before them at the December meeting.—I am, dear Dr Watson, yours faithfully,

"J. COLLINGWOOD BRUCE."

The state of Dr Bruce's health at this time forbade him to engage in a heated discussion, which he felt sure would arise if an attempt were made to reverse the decision of the committee, and with great reluctance he allowed the matter to rest.

In the winter of 1885 his eldest son unsuccessfully contested the constituency of Tyneside. At the conclusion of the contest Dr Bruce wrote him the following letter :—

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 6th Dec. 1885.

"The busy bustling transactions of the last few weeks seem like a dream.

"But now let us try and derive the benefit from our disappointment which it is well calculated to teach us. Soon the battle of life will be over, and then what will our reflections be? Have we striven for the good part, or have we been expending our precious time, our mental faculties, our opportunities, in the search of those bubbles which burst as soon as we grasp them.

“May God give us grace to make sure of everlasting life. Of late my mind has been strongly impressed with the idea that we Christians ought to live in a higher sphere and breathe a different atmosphere from what we do. We ought to live above self and the world. We ought to have a satisfaction and a peace and a joy that the world cannot give and cannot take away. We ought to have a sunshine of soul which all the worry and disappointments and sorrows of the world cannot dim. Let us seek after it. Grasping Christ, in whom all fulness dwells, this higher life will be ours. My mind of late has dwelt much on that passage in 1 John v. 10: ‘He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself.’ How desirable it is that we should have this strong assurance that we are the children of God. Let us pray for it and strive after it.”

With the assistance of Mr Robert Blair, F.S.A., one of the secretaries of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, Dr Bruce began to gather together material for a supplement to the ‘*Lapidarium Septentrionale*,’ to contain an account of the inscribed stones discovered in the North of England since the publication of that work. But although considerable preparations were made, the supplement was not finished in Dr Bruce’s lifetime, and has never been issued.

In the later years of his life, although his health could hardly be said to be failing, he was less active than before, but he was still able to keep many public engagements, taking the chair at Literary and Philosophical Society lectures, and assisting Presby-

terian ministers in the country by preaching for them on special occasions, and attending Bible Society and other religious meetings.

In January 1888 Mr Leitch, the minister of Blackett Street Presbyterian Church, completed the twenty-fifth anniversary of his ministry, and Dr Bruce was asked to preach a special sermon on that occasion. This duty he gladly undertook, and in the presence of a crowded congregation he expressed in forcible language the thankfulness of the people that by God's grace their minister had been enabled for so long a period in health and strength to carry on his ministrations amongst them, proclaiming the gospel, visiting the sick and dying, and devoting special care to the training of the young.

He kept up his interest in the Northumberland small-pipes, and was always pleased when he found any one showing an interest in the instrument. Lord Warkworth was one of these, and Dr Bruce procured for him a beautiful set of pipes, and in April 1888, when he was staying at Alnwick, he took a young piper to the castle to give him some instruction.

About the same time he attended a pipe contest at Bedlington which cost him some effort, but he desired the use of the instrument to become popular with the miners in that district.

In the autumn he delivered a lecture on the small-pipes in Morpeth. In writing home about this, he says :—

“It was very successful. I stayed with my old friend Mr Woodman ; indeed I think I would not have gone to Morpeth but for the opportu-

ity of seeing him. He told me on leaving him that I must visit him in the spring; this I shall be very glad to do if both he and I see the flowering of the crocus."

Later in the same year his friend Mr Bramley Moore suggested that he should retire from his busy life to the quiet of Gerrards Cross, a place full of pleasant associations in connection with his early married life. In reply to this suggestion, Dr Bruce, writing from Newcastle, says:—

"If I were to consult flesh and blood, nothing would delight me more than to go to Gerrards Cross and end my days there in peace and quietness; but so long as the Master gives me a measure of health and strength, and opens doors of usefulness for me here, I must remain at the post of duty."

In July 1888 her Grace Duchess Eleanor of Northumberland paid Dr and Mrs Bruce a visit at Newcastle. Dr Bruce took her to the Natural History Museum to show her the dromedary saddle which her husband, when Lord Prudhoe, used in Egypt, and which her Grace had given to the museum.

On the 30th November 1888 Dr Bruce was much gratified by the circumstance that his eldest son had been returned to the House of Commons as member for the Holborn Division of Finsbury. The congratulations he received from his friends in Newcastle were a source of great satisfaction. Writing to his son, he says:—

"You have got a good start in a new and most difficult sphere; may God give you grace to dis-

charge well the duties which now press upon you."

On the 14th July 1890 Mr John Clayton died in the 99th year of his age. Dr Bruce, in an obituary notice read before the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle on 30th July 1890, thus expresses his sense of the loss he had sustained.

"I enjoyed his friendship for nearly half a century, and now that he has been removed a cloud has come over my existence. He allowed me to approach him whenever I needed his help, and that help was always freely given, notwithstanding the number and the onerous nature of his own public engagements. When passing my book upon the Roman Wall through the press, I submitted the proof-sheets to him, and they always received his careful attention. In my numerous journeys along the Wall I always found a home at Chesters. He was essentially a kind man, and I have heard of noble deeds of generosity performed by him of which the outside world would know nothing."

Dr Bruce had been for a long time exceedingly anxious to find some means of getting 'Hodgson's Northumberland' completed, and Dr Hodgkin had formulated a proposal for carrying out the work. On the 6th September 1890 Dr Bruce writes:—

"Earl Percy is to meet Dr Hodgkin and a few more of us in Newcastle on the 18th to see if we cannot find means to complete 'Hodgson's Northumberland.' There are considerable difficulties in the way."

The meeting took place, and a committee was formed to take practical steps towards beginning the work. The committee included Earl Percy, Major-General Sir W. Crossman, Dr Bruce, Mr Cadwaller J. Bates, Mr Robert Blair, Dr Thomas Hodgkin, the Rev. Canon Greenwell, Mr J. Crawford Hodgson, Mr John George Hodgson, Mr Richard Welford, and other North-country antiquaries.

Mr Cadwaller Bates, who in the following year was High-Sheriff of Northumberland, invited the committee and other gentlemen interested in the matter to a banquet in the castle on Monday, 2nd March 1891. The banquet was a successful initiation of the work of the committee, and served to call public attention to the importance of the enterprise.

It was recognised at once that the undertaking could not be carried out without adequate financial aid, and a guarantee fund was formed, to which liberal support was at once accorded, and the long-wished-for enterprise was begun under favourable auspices. The first volume of the new history was not brought out until the year 1893, after the death of Dr Bruce. In the Preface to that volume it is stated that—

“The Committee, since its formation, has lost by the death of Dr Bruce one of its most valued members, who had from the beginning accorded to the scheme the support of his influence and sympathy.”

On the 18th December 1890 Louisa, the Duchess of Northumberland, wife of Algernon George, sixth Duke, died. Her death was deeply felt by all who

knew her. At the anniversary meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, held on the 28th January 1891, Dr Bruce, one of the vice-presidents, being in the chair, gave expression to the general sentiment when he said—

“At our last meeting I had the painful duty of asking you to express your sympathy with our president, Lord Ravensworth, upon the severe loss which he had sustained in the removal by death of his Countess. I have now the sorrowful duty of asking you to condole with our patron, the Duke of Northumberland, upon the irreparable loss which he has sustained in the death of the Duchess. I shall not on this occasion harrow up my feelings or yours by dwelling on the excellency of her character, or the deeds of goodness and charity in which she indulged. These to some extent are known to you all. But I may touch upon that part of her character which was in sympathy with our feelings as antiquaries. You all know what a vitality coins lend to the historic page. The Duchess being an ardent student of the Book of books, felt a great interest in the coins mentioned in it, and asked me to make her a collection of Bible coins. I had great pleasure in doing so, and by degrees succeeded in forming for her a tolerably complete cabinet of coins bearing upon the Books of the Old and New Testament. We had the shekel, for thirty pieces of which Judas betrayed his Master; the half shekel, which every male had to give annually for the service of the sanctuary; a daric or drachm, a gold coin of which we read

in Ezra and Nehemiah ; the coins of Alexander and the Ptolemies, who one and another invaded the land between the close of the Old and the opening of the New Testament ; of Pompey, who brought Judæa under the power of Rome ; of the various Roman emperors who are mentioned in Scripture ; of the tribute money—the denarius of Tiberius, of the Herods, and of Pontius Pilate ; of the didrachm or stater which was found in the mouth of the fish ; the Judæa Capta of Titus and Vespasian ; the farthing and other coins, and some of those of the seven Churches of Asia. I need not say that the Duchess, as a diligent student of Scripture, greatly valued these coins. Her Grace has now ceased from her labour, but her works follow her. Her example will not be lost upon those who were favoured with her acquaintance. I am sure that all of us sympathise very deeply with the Duke and the other members of his family upon the loss they have sustained, and we desire to convey to his Grace our heartfelt condolence, with the earnest prayer that he may be sustained by the Author of all true peace and comfort."

In August 1891 Dr Bruce suffered from a severe illness, and for a time he was confined to his room. The temporary loss of his invaluable services to the various institutions with which he was associated was keenly felt, and general sympathy was extended to him in his illness.



## CHAPTER XXI.

APRIL 1892, LAST ILLNESS AND DEATH—FUNERAL AND OBITUARY NOTICES—SEPTEMBER 1893, MEMORIAL TABLET ON HOUSE, 2 FRAMLINGTON PLACE, UNVEILED BY LORD PERCY—OCTOBER 1896, STATUE OF DR BRUCE PLACED IN NICHE OF WALL OF NEW BUILDING ERECTED ON SITE OF THE SCHOOL—UNVEILING MONUMENT IN ST NICHOLAS CATHEDRAL BY LORD RAVENSWORTH—SERMON BY THE REV. RICHARD LEITCH ON THE OCCASION OF DR BRUCE'S DEATH—APRIL 1893, DEATH OF MRS BRUCE—MEMORIAL WINDOW.

FROM the attack of illness referred to in the last chapter Dr Bruce recovered, and was able to attend the House Committee of the Infirmary and to keep other engagements connected with his philanthropic work. In a letter to his son Gainsford on the 16th January 1892 he says: "Next week I shall have to write the annual report of the Infirmary. This is always a serious and troublesome affair." While engaged in writing this report he caught a severe cold, and although he rallied for a time and was able to see his friends at his own house, his health was severely shaken. Another attack of weakness came on at the end of March. Bronchitis set in, followed by congestion of the lungs. His condition became serious, and on the morning of the 5th of April, shortly after eight o'clock, he quietly passed away. He retained his faculties almost to the last, and looked forward with confidence and hope to a joyful resurrection through the merits of Christ his Saviour.

His death was felt as a severe loss, not only by the people of the North of England, but by a large circle of friends throughout the country and abroad. As is shown by the terms of the various addresses delivered at his death in commemoration of his work as a philanthropist, as the head of a leading educational institution, as a scholar and antiquary, his name was held in reverence by all with whom he was associated during his long and honourable career. It was universally recognised that his life and work illustrated all that was noble and useful in public and in private life.

He had expressed in a written paper his wishes respecting his funeral. He desired to avoid having any part of the service in the Cemetery Chapel, which he knew would hold only a small portion of the persons who would attend, and to have the service conducted in the open air by his own minister, Mr Leitch, and that those present should not incur any risk of cold he desired they should not uncover their heads. He also requested that the ladies of the Infirmary singing band should attend the funeral and sing some of his favourite hymns.

The funeral took place on Friday, the 8th of April, at Jesmond Old Cemetery. The public were asked to join the hearse and the carriages containing the relatives near the Natural History Museum at Barras Bridge. At that point there was a very great assemblage. A long line of carriages extended up the North Road, and a large concourse of people lined the footpaths on the North Road and Jesmond Road. There were representatives of all the public bodies in the city. The Mayor and Sheriff and other members of the corporation were present. There were

representatives of the Board of Guardians, the School Board, the Royal Infirmary, the Society of Antiquaries, the Literary and Philosophical Society, the Natural History Society, the Newcastle Bible Society, the Young Men's Christian Association, the City Mission, the Brandling Place Home, the Discharged Prisoners' Aid Society, and other religious and philanthropic bodies. So large an attendance has seldom been seen at a funeral in Newcastle. Many of the clergy of the Church of England and ministers of Nonconformist congregations, merchants of the quay-side, and leading professional men, were present. Indeed there was no class unrepresented, all being anxious to pay a last mark of respect and esteem to the memory of one whom they mourned as a friend.

When the procession was formed, the line of carriages extended nearly the whole length of the Jesmond Road from the North Road to the Jesmond Cemetery.

At the cemetery the scene was an exceedingly striking one. The ladies of the Infirmary singing band met the coffin at the cemetery gate, and, leading the way to the grave through a great concourse of people, sang "I am the Resurrection and the Life," and the other sentences from the burial service. At the grave the singing band sang, with great feeling, the 90th Psalm. The Rev. Richard Leitch then said the Lord's Prayer and read the lesson from 1 Cor. xv. The hymn, beginning "Peace, perfect peace," was sung, and after a short prayer Mr Leitch addressed the congregation round the grave:—

"My dear friends, Newcastle to-day is burying her best known, and perhaps most distinguished,

citizen. The grave is about to close over all that is mortal of one who has been very intimately associated with its educational, social, moral, and religious welfare. Few men in the North of England have risen so high in popular and public esteem as Dr Bruce, and for generations to come his name will be mentioned as that of one whom Newcastle is proud to reckon among her most illustrious sons. A native of this city, his long life was spent here, and year by year his influence went on increasing till his name had become a household word. Almost every philanthropic and religious agency in our city and neighbourhood claimed and received his hearty and valuable support. During almost the whole of his public life he has been in the forefront of every movement that tended to the social and moral elevation of the community; and, now that he has fallen before the stroke of death, he will be sorely missed on many a committee, in many an abode of sorrow, and on many a public platform.

“To many of us gathered around his grave it will be difficult to realise for many a day to come that we shall hear his voice no more, and that his venerable figure—so familiar to our streets—has passed for ever beyond the range of our mortal vision. Rich and poor alike feel that they have lost in Dr Bruce a true, a tried, and a valued friend. His life was one of ceaseless activity. His energies went forth in many different directions. His name was a tower of strength to any cause that he espoused, and few men have died so universally beloved and so deeply regretted. Thousands feel to-day

as if his decease has been to them a great personal loss. His fine literary taste, his high classical attainments, his boundless enthusiasm, his exalted sense of honour and of duty, and, above all, his genuine humility and his untiring zeal for the advancement of everything that was true and good, could not fail to make Dr Bruce a man greatly beloved. His death was a fitting close to his honoured and useful life. Calmly and believingly did he commit his departing spirit into the hands of God, trusting only for his eternal salvation to the merits of his Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. May his death be sanctified to us all. May the grace which sustained him during his lengthened pilgrimage be given to all of us. I cannot close this brief address without quoting from a document written by his own hand in which, referring to the last rites that may be paid to his memory, he says: 'If the minister should give any utterances at my grave, let it be to the praise of the glorious Redeemer, who submitted to death that we, His guilty creatures, might not perish everlastingly. Let him entreat all standing by to make sure of everlasting life.' In the name of him whose body is now lying in this silent grave, but whose spirit, we doubt not, is with its blessed Redeemer, I now affectionately entreat you all—to use our dear friend's words—to make sure of everlasting life. I know of only one way in which this can be done, and that I will give in the last words which I whispered into the ear of Dr Bruce as I stood by his dying couch on Monday night: 'He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life.' Sin

hath been atoned for. The way of forgiveness is open to all. Eternal life is a gift of God, and is received by faith in Christ Jesus. Receiving Christ, the soul is united to Him and becomes a possessor of a life that knows no death, for to such Christ repeats to-day what He said to the sister of Lazarus in days of old: 'Whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die.' Antiquary, philanthropist, Christian, father, we bid you a sorrowful farewell. Thou restest from thy labours, but thy works will follow thee. May thy example stimulate us all to high and noble deeds. Our loss is thy gain. Under this old ash tree we lay thy body down, believing that in the morning of the Resurrection thou wilt have a part in the 'Resurrection of the Just.' 'Help, Lord; for the godly man ceaseth; for the faithful fail from amongst the children of men.' Amen."

A hymn, "Now the labourer's task is o'er," was then sung, and the Benediction was given.

All the north-country newspapers contained obituary notices expressing in feeling terms the loss the community had sustained in the death of Dr Bruce.

At a meeting of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle, held on the 27th of April, Dr Thomas Hodgkin read an obituary notice of Dr Bruce, which concluded with the following passage:—

"The public life of Newcastle has lost one of its best known and most familiar figures; the city one of its most respected and beloved citizens; but we, as members of the Society of Antiquaries, naturally feel our own loss the

most. We shall no more see him entering with his plaid over his shoulder to take his place in the president's chair in this room. Our debates will never again be helped by his wise and courteous guidance, nor enlivened by his ready humour, nor enriched by the treasures which his memory had accumulated in half a century of archæological study. We shall honour his memory most fittingly by endeavouring to keep alive the enthusiasm which he imparted to us for his own pursuits; but we shall long feel that there is a painful gap left in our ranks by the removal of our honoured chief, John Collingwood Bruce."<sup>1</sup>

Most of the public bodies in the North of England passed resolutions expressing their sense of the loss sustained by the death of Dr Bruce; and a large number of letters were received by the family from persons of position and influence, as well as others, offering their condolence. A few of these resolutions and letters are given below.

At a meeting of the Council of the city and county of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, held on the 6th day of April 1892, it was unanimously resolved, upon the motion of the Mayor, seconded by the Sheriff—

“That the Council hereby record their deep sorrow at the death of Dr John Collingwood Bruce, who has for so many years been identified with the public life of the city, and by his ever genial and courteous demeanour endeared himself to all with whom he was associated, and by whom his memory will ever be held in affectionate

<sup>1</sup> *Archæologia Æliana*, vol. xv. p. 364.

esteem and regard. And that the Council hereby tender their very sincere and heartfelt sympathy with the family of the late Dr Bruce in their affliction."

The Session of the Blackett Street Presbyterian Church, on the 12th of April 1892, unanimously passed a resolution, from which the following extract is made :—

"The Session desires to place on record the sense of the loss they have sustained in the death of Dr John Collingwood Bruce.

"For over forty years Dr Bruce exercised the office of a ruling elder in this church. He was greatly esteemed and beloved by all his fellow-elders as a man of great learning, eminent piety, of intimate knowledge of Holy Scripture, and of unvarying zeal and devotion in the cause of Christ."

A memorial minute passed by the Newcastle Presbytery on the 10th day of May 1892, after expressing the sorrow of the Presbytery on the death of the Rev. John Collingwood Bruce, stated that—

"As a native and citizen of Newcastle-upon-Tyne he was most worthy of the respect and affection he so long enjoyed. As a philanthropist he was always ready to assist the needy and lessen the sorrows of the afflicted, . . . and his effective aid to the Town Mission did much to promote the preaching of the Gospel among the poor."



The secretaries of the Royal Victoria Asylum for the Blind wrote to Mrs Bruce on the 7th May 1892—

“We are desired by the committee of this institution to express to you their keen sense of the loss which has fallen upon them by the death of their revered colleague, Dr Bruce, who for many years was a regular attendant at the meetings of the committee, and at all times evinced the liveliest interest in the welfare of the inmates, with whom he was a general favourite.”

A letter from the chairman and the secretary of the Newcastle City Mission, dated 6th April 1892, stated as follows:—

“At a meeting held last night the committee were deeply touched to hear of the death of their beloved and honoured president, and wish to share in the general marks of respect which are everywhere being paid to his memory, and particularly desire to convey to you their own sorrow and deep sympathy in the loss which has deprived them of an esteemed and valued president.”

The clerk to the governors of the Allan's Endowed Schools, on the 3rd of May 1892, wrote to Mrs Bruce expressing their regret at the loss which she had sustained by the death of the late Dr Bruce, who was one of the governors. The letter stated—

“In fair weather or in foul he regularly attended the meetings, and while the schools themselves will feel his loss in common with

so many other institutions of a like nature in this city, his fellow-governors will greatly miss his genial and kindly face."

The secretaries of the Literary and Philosophical Society wrote to Mrs Bruce on April 20, 1892—

"On behalf of the Committee of the Literary and Philosophical Society, we have been desired to express their sincere sympathy with you in your great bereavement.

"In Dr Bruce the Society loses one of its most honoured and valued members. He had been amongst its active managers for more than half a century. The committee also lose a colleague whose wide knowledge, wise counsel, and genial courtesy were to them sources alike of pleasure and of strength."

Among many private letters were the following :—

From the Right Rev. the Lord Bishop of Newcastle,  
Dr Wilberforce, to Mr Gainsford Bruce, Q.C.,  
M.P.

*"6th April 1892.*

"I am deeply grieved at the loss we have all sustained. I had a very real regard for your dear father, and his influence in Newcastle was always on the side of peace as well as of justice and truth, and we shall miss him much. . . . Give my most respectful sympathy to Mrs Bruce."

From the Rev. Canon Lloyd, Vicar of Newcastle,  
now Lord Bishop of Newcastle, to the Same.

*"April 6th, 1892.*

"I want to convey to you and your mother my heartfelt sympathy in the sorrow which has come

to you in the death of your father, and such a father! The appreciation and affection in which he was held by all sorts and conditions of men must, I know, be felt by you; and the happy retrospect of a life spent in making others happy will be a great comfort to you. . . . May God help and comfort your mother."

From the Earl of Ravensworth to the Same.

*"April 7th, 1892.*

"I have learnt with the most sincere regret that our Society has lost its revered 'Nestor.' At his great age we can hardly wonder, though we may lament that this heavy loss has befallen us. We shall miss him in the old Castle, at the Infirmary, and on the Roman Wall alike; and society of every class will miss him wherever good was to be done.

"Newcastle has lost one of its brightest ornaments, and we have each and all of us lost a dear and honoured friend. Literature and history have lost a great patron, and we may truly say that the world has lost a really good old man."

From Earl Percy, now Duke of Northumberland,  
to the Same.

*"6th April 1892.*

"We are very sorry for you all, and we feel acutely that we have lost a very old and true friend, and one to whom we all owe much. I shall never forget all his kindness to me personally, and how surely I could always rely on his sound and thoughtful advice and ready help. It was impossible to be with him without being

better for it, and without feeling that in everything his aim was highest and best. There are very many who will mourn his loss as a very real and great sorrow, and it is easy to imagine how overwhelming it must be to Mrs Bruce and to all his family.

"If you have the opportunity of doing so without its seeming an intrusion, pray assure her of our sincere sympathy. The Duke desires me to say that he joins with me in all this, and that he specially begs to convey his deep sympathy with Mrs Bruce."

From her Grace, Eleanor, Duchess of Northumberland,  
to the Same.

"VENICE, *April 8, 1892.*

"DEAR SIR,—Your letter just received has filled my heart with sorrow. Most truly, most deeply do I sympathise with you in the loss of your excellent father. There were few like him, so good, so kind, living for others, and ready at any moment to meet his God; but what his loss will be to many I hardly dare to think. Far and wide will he be mourned; and, allow me to say, by none more than by myself, for his constant kindness, added to his devotion to my dear husband, made me positively love him! My thoughts and prayers will be with you all, especially with your poor mother."

From Dr Thomas Hodgkin to Mrs Bruce.

"FALMOUTH, *7th April 1892.*

"Your husband will be grievously missed in Newcastle, at the Infirmary, at the old Castle, at

the Y.M.C.A. meetings, but few will miss him more than I shall. It will be always to me one of the blessings to be remembered in looking back on life that I have had for so many years the privilege of the friendship of such a man. Truly he has 'served his own generation by the will of God'; and the thought of this long and joyful service should comfort us now that he has entered into his well-earned rest."

From Mr William Woodman to the Same.

"MORPETH, 6th April 1892.

"It was with no little concern that I have just read of the death of my friend, a friend of more than sixty years without a single jar. . . . He was rightly styled 'the good Doctor,' and I fear it will be difficult to fill his place in your city, where he was an active member of every useful institution."

From Mr Wigham Richardson to Mr Gainsford Bruce.

"NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, 15th April 1892.

"I feel that Newcastle has lost its most distinguished citizen, and I one who was always good and kind to me. I suppose that our neighbourhood has become of interest to the whole wide world from the immortal book on the Roman Wall. Scholars may dispute some of the deductions, but every man of taste must admire its conception and execution."

The Rev. Principal Oswald Dykes, D.D., to  
Sir George B. Bruce.

"Let me say in a word how deeply I sympathise with you in your brother's death. To be sure, he has passed away in a ripe age, full of years and honours, after a blameless and useful life, in the full assurance of immortality. And what happier lot could we wish for any son of man? The loss not only comes home to you, but to those of us likewise who only from a distance saw and rejoiced in his wise and holy old age. To meet him was a delight. No more venerable figure adorned our Synod or our Church."

A movement had been inaugurated in Newcastle about the year 1868 by Mr John Robinson and other persons acting with him to place tablets to mark the houses in which distinguished persons had lived. Dr Bruce, on the 3rd September 1889, had unveiled a tablet let into the masonry of the house on Sandhill in which Bessie Surtees had lived, with whom John Scott, afterwards Lord Eldon, eloped. It was resolved, after Dr Bruce's death, to place one of these memorial tablets on the house 2 Framlington Place, where he had lived during the later years of his life. The ceremony of unveiling the tablet was performed by the Right Hon. Earl Percy, in the presence of a large company of friends, on the 15th September 1893, the anniversary of Dr Bruce's birthday. The tablet was of marble, and was let into the front wall of the house, and bore the following inscription:—

"John Collingwood Bruce, LL.D., D.C.L., F.S.A., ANTIQUARY,  
HISTORIAN, AND PHILANTHROPIST, SPENT THE LAST 40 YEARS  
OF HIS LIFE AND WROTE THE HISTORY OF THE ROMAN WALL  
IN THIS HOUSE.

BORN XV SEP. MDCCCV. DIED V APRIL MDCCCXCII."

Earl Percy said

“that was not an occasion for many words. They all knew Dr Bruce well; there was no one more familiar to the people of Newcastle, no one who entered more thoroughly into the life of the city than he. It might strike them, perhaps, that what they were now doing was a comparatively small token of their regard and esteem for Dr Bruce’s memory. But it was a very wise custom, he thought, that they should note the dwellings of the remarkable men who had departed, and in many ways Dr Bruce was one of the most remarkable men that Newcastle had ever produced. They had recorded on the tablet that he was distinguished as an antiquary, as an historian, and as a philanthropist. As an antiquary and an historian his vast knowledge, his patient research, his great accuracy, placed him in a pre-eminent position, and made him an unrivalled authority amongst archæologists, especially with regard to the periods which he had more particularly studied. And as a philanthropist his heart and soul were bound up in seeking the welfare of the poor and suffering. He was not contented, as perhaps too many of them were, with joining movements, attending public meetings, and placing his name upon a list of institutions, but devoted a large portion of his time to the personal care of the poor. No claims upon him were allowed to interfere with his weekly visit to the Infirmary. These were all this tablet recorded of their dear old friend Dr Bruce, and it was fitting that they should confine themselves to these characteristics in a memorial, intended

for the inspection of every passer-by. But it might be allowed to him to add that he had the privilege of Dr Bruce's friendship for a great number of years. He was not only his friend, but the friend of the whole of his family. He did him more acts of kindness than he could well mention or even recall. He was prompted to say one word more. Dr Bruce had many merits which were not recorded on the tablet. In one word, he might say that he always struck him as the pattern of the courteous Christian gentleman in the highest and widest sense of the phrase. And it was a striking feature in his character that, strong as his convictions were, he entertained the widest and most liberal toleration for the opinion of others. It was this quality, combined with his great stores of knowledge and the readiness which he always evinced to put them at the service of any inquirer, however ignorant or however young, which made him a charming companion and a faithful friend, whom none of those who knew him would ever forget and whom they should always mourn."

In the year 1881 the house in Percy Street ceased to be used for a school, and the property passed into the hands of Councillor W. J. Sanderson, who had been a pupil in the school. The old buildings were taken down, and so the last vestige disappeared of a house which for more than seventy years had been the chief educational institution in the city. The owner of the premises, in erecting new buildings on the old site, determined to commemorate appropriately and permanently the associations which con-



nected the historian of the Roman Wall with the place. The new buildings were called Bruce Buildings, and a canopied niche was formed in the front wall, in which was placed a characteristic figure of the late Dr Bruce designed by Mr Ralph Hedley. Below the statue was the following inscription :—

JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, LL.D., D.C.L., F.S.A.

SITE OF PERCY STREET ACADEMY

FOUNDED BY JOHN BRUCE IN 1806, AND CONDUCTED

BY JOHN COLLINGWOOD BRUCE FROM 1834 TO 1860.

The ceremony of unveiling this statue was performed by his son Mr Justice Bruce on the 11th of July 1896, in the presence of a large gathering of people, including the Mayor, the Sheriff, Sir Geo. Barclay Bruce, Miss Anne Bruce, Mr John Philipson, and many former pupils of Dr Bruce. The Mayor, Mr Riley Lord, afterwards Sir Riley Lord, in his speech said that the men who were at the Percy Street Academy had made the history of Newcastle during the last thirty years at least. Mr Justice Bruce having unveiled the statue, made a short speech, in the course of which he said he hoped that the citizens of Newcastle would long cherish the memory of one who had devoted the best energies of a long life to promote the welfare of his native city. On the motion of the Sheriff, a cordial vote of thanks was given to Councillor Sanderson for having placed the statue there. Councillor Sanderson, in reply, said that it had given him the very greatest pleasure to be able to mark the site where the good old school stood, and to perpetuate the memory of one whom he dearly loved,

and whom all the pupils of the school dearly loved.

Dr Bruce's friends placed a marble monument to his memory in the Chapel of St Margaret in St Nicholas Cathedral. The monument consists of a marble sarcophagus supporting a draped bier, on which rests the recumbent figure of Dr Bruce in his doctor's gown.

The sarcophagus bears the following inscription:—

*In Memoriam*

JOHANNIS COLLINGWOOD BRUCE, LL.D., D.C.L.,

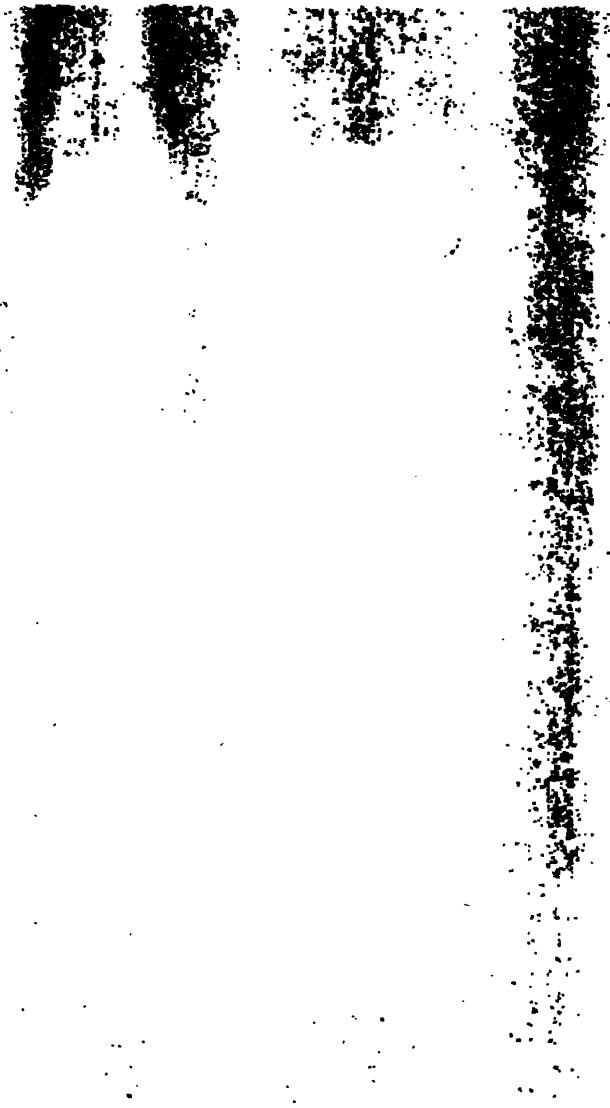
VIRI AMABILIS CIVIS OPTIMI EGREGII JUVENUM PRÆCEPTORIS  
STRENUI RERUM ANTIQUARUM INDAGATORIS ATQUE  
INTERPRETIS ET AUCTORUM  
PRÆSERTIM QUI HISTORIAM VALLI ROMANI TRACTAVERUNT  
INTER PRIMOS  
HABITI IDEM CHRISTI FIDELIS DISCIPULUS SUI PIETATEM  
OMNIBUS  
BENEVOLENTIAM PAUPERIBUS ATQUE ÆGROTIS AUXILIUM  
DILIGENTISSIME PRÆSTABAT. NAT. MDCCCV.  
OB. MDCCCXCII.

The monument was the work of Mr George Simmonds.

On the 6th of October 1896 the ceremony of unveiling the monument was performed by the Earl of Ravensworth in the presence of a large company of Dr Bruce's friends.

Before the unveiling took place the friends of Dr Bruce met in the large upper vestry of St Nicholas, and the following speeches were made on the occasion.

The Earl of Ravensworth, in opening the proceedings, said—







Henry H. H. H. H.

*Monument in St. Nicholas Cathedral.*



"They were met on a very special occasion. It was, however, an occasion which would bring feelings of regret to the minds of many of those present. The occasion was one of special interest, because it was probably the last time that the friends and admirers of the late Dr Bruce, and he had many, would have an opportunity of paying their tribute of respect and love to his memory. Anything like a long and laboured eulogium on Dr Bruce was unnecessary in the presence of those amongst whom he spent so many years. He whose memory they were met to perpetuate was loved and appreciated by all who had any connection with him. During his long and valued life he was a prominent and ardent worker in many spheres of public usefulness. And all those who were in any way associated with him in any one of those pursuits, whether as a devoted servant of God, as an instructor of youth, as a true and tender friend, as a minister to the sick and afflicted, or as a literary man, would agree with him that they could not fail to observe in him in any one of these occupations the same energy, enthusiasm, zeal, and ability which were characteristics of his life. They also noticed the thoroughness with which he entered upon any enterprise, and the faculty which he possessed of inspiring his fellow-workers of all classes with enthusiasm. He knew that on many occasions Dr Bruce admitted the valuable assistance that he himself had derived from all classes during the course of his long and arduous labours. The deeds, and even the virtues, of the best men and most eminent men were, he was afraid, in these days of rapid change and great

excitement, apt to pass from the minds of the younger generation. It was probable, he did not say that it would be so entirely, that Dr Bruce's work as an historian would chiefly commend his name to posterity. The memory of Dr Bruce's good deeds and virtues might pass away, but his writings would remain. The study of antiquarian lore was with Dr Bruce a life study and a pastime; and he had handed down to posterity a history which marked him as one of the most observant and most ingenious historians of ancient times. His labours were unwearied, and in his work he took a delight which attracted everybody who was associated with him in his explorations."

Earl Percy said—

"He had been asked to add a few words, and he could not decline to say something upon an occasion like that, when they met to do honour to the memory of one who was the intimate friend of his family and of himself for many years. It was impossible for any one who knew Dr Bruce at all, and it was still more impossible for those who knew him well, to have anything but feelings of the highest respect and admiration for his character and attainments. Much had been said and much would continue to be said in the world of Dr Bruce as an antiquary. But the people of Newcastle, he thought, would also remember him as one whose heart was always open to the cry of distress, and as one who took a real interest in the welfare of the town in which he lived so long. Any one,



rich or poor, coming to Dr Bruce for assistance in any undertaking always found in him a wise adviser and a true and hearty friend. Dr Bruce's counsel would always be remembered by those who had had the benefit of it. Those who knew him felt his loss keenly, and they deemed it an honour to have had such an opportunity of recording their sentiments. Although the memorial was but a slight tribute to his merits, it was nevertheless one which Dr Bruce's family and friends and the people of Newcastle would value."

Dr Thomas Hodgkin said—

"He thought Dr Bruce's life was an admirable and beautiful example of the fact that an intellectual study and an intellectual pastime of this kind, although engrossing and pursued with great success, need not harden a man's heart or close his ears to the cry of humanity. In this respect he thought that their dear departed friend's life was an admirable example and lesson to all of them, and he would especially commend it to the young men amongst them. Let them have a strong intellectual taste of some kind which would make their lives happy, but they must not let that taste become a selfish indulgence, or prevent them from doing their share of the work of the world and in the relief of the distress of the world."

On the Sunday after Dr Bruce's death the Rev. Richard Leitch preached a sermon in Blackett Street Presbyterian Church, from which some extracts have already been made. The following passages taken

from the same sermon form a fitting conclusion to the Life of Dr Bruce.<sup>1</sup>

“Dr Bruce’s life was largely spent in the highly honourable vacation of teaching, and scarcely ever was any master held in higher esteem and honour by his pupils than Dr Bruce was by his. What Arnold was to Rugby, Dr Bruce was to Newcastle-upon-Tyne. His vast stores of information, his kindliness of disposition, his sterling uprightness of character, and the respect in which he held those whom he sought to instruct, made him honoured and beloved by all. . . .

“Dr Bruce was more than a distinguished antiquary. He was a Christian—a true man of God, a man who loved and prized the ‘Book of books,’ a man who looked at all subjects from a Christian standpoint. Christ was ever the centre of his thoughts. I have often heard him express the wish that he could find amongst the Roman remains in Great Britain some unmistakable traces of the Christian faith as existing amongst the Roman soldiers who were stationed in this island.

“Few, as many of you now hearing me can testify, were the public speeches which Dr Bruce delivered in which some allusion or other was not made to the Christian’s faith and hope; and yet where is the man that ever dreamt for a moment of accusing him of insincerity? . . .

“All felt that his religion was part and parcel of himself, and that for *him* to give utterance

<sup>1</sup> The sermon is printed at length in a volume entitled ‘The Light of the Gentiles,’ published by A. H. Stockwell, London.

to lofty Christian sentiments when speaking on even secular subjects was both natural and becoming. . . . Grace with him was second nature. It shone in all he did and said.

"As a Christian his views of divine truth were strictly evangelical. He was warmly attached to the Puritans, and a great lover of the Puritan theology and literature. Philip Henry and John Bunyan and Richard Baxter were to him very sacred names. All his writings, lectures, and sermons bore traces of high culture, and his style had a rhythm and a beauty which enchain the mind and fascinate the heart of the reader.

"Were I asked to name some of the outstanding features in the Christian life of my dear and honoured friend, I should mention his *intense admiration of the Saviour*. The very mention of Christ's name was to him an inspiration. He loved to linger in thought on His supreme divinity; and those sermons were most prized by him that set forth His glorious excellencies.

"Christ's death he ever viewed as an atonement for human sin, and all his hopes for eternity were based on this. Oh, how he loved to dwell on Christ Jesus as the substitute for guilty men, and as having borne 'our sins in His own body on the tree.' He clung to the cross in life and in death. *Prayerfulness* was another marked characteristic of his spiritual life. Who that ever heard him pray in public can ever forget the humility, the fervour, the heavenly mindedness that marked his supplications at the throne of grace? His prayers at *Communion* seasons in

this church were often spoken of as special means of grace to his fellow-worshippers. Who was there that heard them but must ever remember them with gratitude and delight ?

“ On his last visit to London I went with him. We stayed at the same hotel. I secured a bedroom next to his, with only a thin partition between the two rooms. Once I awoke about midnight and thought I heard a sound, and on straining my ears to listen, I found that it came from Dr Bruce’s room, and that the old man, in the dead of night, was *wrestling with God in prayer*. I have never mentioned this incident until to-day, but I feel as if I could not keep it back when I am speaking to you, as I feel constrained to do, about the *prayerful spirit* of one whom we all so greatly revered. It is such facts as these that reveal the *true* man.

“ Generosity was also a very distinct trait in his character. I never knew a kinder heart beat in a human bosom. I never asked him, so far as I can remember, for anything that he did not grant. His benefactions to the poor are beyond all praise. I have Mr Redmayne’s authority for stating that over and over again Dr Bruce has come to him in the Newcastle Infirmary and told him to send poor patients recovering from severe sickness to the Whitley Convalescent Home at *his expense*; and having incidentally heard from one of the medical men who waited upon him during his last illness that one of the nurses in the Infirmary had been ill and needed rest and change of air, he sent, unsolicited, a cheque to defray the expenses of a holiday for her.

“ What our Infirmary owes to Dr Bruce few

persons know. What time and money and energy and attention has he not given to it? What a living and loving interest he always took in the patients. How solicitous he was about the welfare both of their bodies and their souls. . . . He used to call it the 'House of Mercy.' His sympathy followed the patients to their homes. I remember several years ago being present with him at a meeting on the Sunday afternoon at the Y.M.C.A. Rooms, and hearing an address by Dr Hodgkin of this city on St Paul—an address that was at once interesting and edifying. When the meeting had broken up I went with Dr Bruce to make a call that he wished specially to make, and to my surprise he led me to a poor part of the city and to the house of a labouring man whose acquaintance he had made in the Infirmary. I remember his sitting down on a humble seat in a small room and talking kindly and wisely to the poor labourer and his family, and I can assure you, though I said nothing I came away greatly touched by all I had seen and heard that afternoon.

"Though Dr Bruce's society was courted by the great, by men eminent in literature and science, both in this and other countries, yet he was emphatically the poor man's friend, and this largely accounts for the unique place that he held in the affections of the people of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. . . .

"The City Mission claimed him as its President from its very commencement and all along its history. Our missionaries loved him, and well they might, for their services won his heartiest approval and enlisted his keenest sympathy. In

many of their mission halls and rooms his was a familiar face and his a familiar voice. . . .

"Of his closing days your time does not permit me to speak at length. Suffice it to say that for months past he lived much in solemn and earnest contemplation of that eternity of which he always spoke in such grave and solemn accents. He aimed at 'giving all diligence to make his calling and election sure.' All who have visited him in his weakness and sickness were struck with the supreme significance that he was attaching to the great concerns of the eternal world. He 'meditated on God's law day and night.' He spent much of his time in prayer. His soul seemed to get gradually weaned from the world. . . .

"I often felt that his sick-chamber was as the outer court of heaven. To me it had a heavenly sanctity. He had always some favourite text to quote. He mused much upon the *freeness* and *fulness* of Divine grace and our indebtedness to that grace for our salvation. His soul revelled in the precious promises of Holy Scripture.

"But he is gone. The place that once knew him will know him no more.

"The sad tidings that he was dead filled many a heart with bitter grief, and it was felt by thousands that Newcastle had lost one it could ill afford to spare. Men of all political creeds and of all religious denominations and of all ranks of life vied with one another in paying respect to his memory. All who witnessed the long procession of mourners that followed his body to the grave on Friday last felt that they had seen a spectacle of great historical interest in the annals of this city. He rests in peace. His

work is done. His day is over. In his case the prophecy has been fulfilled: 'Thou shalt come to thy grave in a full age, like as a shock of corn cometh in in his season.'

It would not be right to finish this book without a reference to the beloved wife by whose affection Dr Bruce was cheered and supported during his long life. A letter written by him to her for her birthday expresses how highly he valued her loving devotion.

"2 FRAMLINGTON PLACE, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE,  
9th Sept. 1888.

"MY VERY DEAR CHARLOTTE,—On getting home yesterday I found a note from you which concluded with the words 'Your loving wife, Charlotte Bruce.' I assure you these words went to my heart. For more than half a century I have thanked God for His great goodness in giving you to me as my wife. And I thank Him now more cordially and emphatically than ever. You bear with failings and weaknesses and do all in your power (in a thousand ways) to promote my comfort and happiness. I note these things though I do not tell you that I do so. You are more precious to me now than you ever were. My days are now nearly run out, and you have seen more than usually falls to the lot of humanity: let us look forward with hope to the eternity that lies before us, and may God when He has done with us here receive us to Himself, and enable us in hallowed fellowship and in conjunction with those of our kith and kin who have gone before to praise Him in a way we cannot now.

“To-morrow is your birthday. May God’s choicest blessings rest on you now and evermore.  
—I am, my very dear Charlotte, your loving husband,  
J. COLLINGWOOD BRUCE.”

Mrs Bruce survived her husband a year and two days: she passed away on the 7th of April 1893 after a short illness, and was laid beside her husband in Jesmond Cemetery. The Infirmary singing band attended the funeral and sang hymns by the grave. The service was conducted by the Rev. Richard Leitch.

A memorial window, designed by Mr Kempe, was placed by her two sons in St Margaret’s Chapel above the monument to her husband. The window contains a representation of the holy women at the sepulchre; above these are three figures. St Helena occupies the centre light: she was the wife of a Roman emperor who died at York, a Christian, and closely allied with Roman rule in Britain. St Hilda, who occupies the left light, was selected as the most eminent woman among our early north-country saints. St Ethelburga of Lyminge occupies the right light. She was a very favourite personage in Dr Bruce’s household: she was a south-country woman, as was Mrs Bruce, and, like her, spent her married life in Northumberland.

On the lower portion of the window is this inscription—

“GIVING THANKS TO GOD FOR THE LIFE AND HONOURED MEMORY  
OF Charlotte Gainsford, WIFE OF John Collingwood Bruce,  
HER TWO SONS DEDICATE THIS WINDOW. MDCCCXCVI.”



**Catalogue**  
**of**  
**Messrs Blackwood & Sons'**  
**Publications**

## PERIODS OF EUROPEAN LITERATURE: A Complete and CONTINUOUS HISTORY OF THE SUBJECT. Edited by PROFESSOR SAINTS- BURY. In 12 crown 8vo vols., each 5s. net.

- I. THE DARK AGES. By Professor W. P. KER.
- II. THE FLOURISHING OF ROMANCE AND THE RISE OF ALLEGORY. (11TH AND 12TH CENTURIES.) By GEORGE SAINTS-BURY, M.A., Hon. LL.D., Aberdeen, Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature in Edinburgh University.
- III. THE FOURTEENTH CENTURY. By F. J. SNELL.
- IV. THE TRANSITION PERIOD. By G. GREGORY SMITH.
- V. THE EARLIER RENAISSANCE. By THE EDITOR.
- VI. THE LATER RENAISSANCE. By DAVID HANNAY.
- VIII. THE AUGUSTAN AGES. By OLIVER ELTON.
- IX. THE MID-EIGHTEENTH CENTURY. By J. H. MILLAR.
- XI. THE ROMANTIC TRIUMPH. By T. S. OMOND.

*The other Volumes are:—*

- VII. THE FIRST HALF OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. Prof. H. J. C. GRIERSON.
- X. THE ROMANTIC REVOLT. Prof. C. E. VAUGHAN.
- XII. THE LATER NINETEENTH CENTURY. . . . . The Editor.

## PHILOSOPHICAL CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS.

Edited by WILLIAM KNIGHT, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of St Andrews. *Re-issue in Shilling Volumes net.*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| DESCARTES, . . . . . Prof. Mahaffy.        | VICO, . . . . . Prof. Flint.             |
| BUTLER, . . . . . Rev. W. L. Collins.      | HOBBS, . . . . . Prof. Crook Robertson.  |
| BURKELEY, . . . . . Prof. Campbell Fraser. | HUME, . . . . . Prof. Knight.            |
| FICHTE, . . . . . Prof. Adamson.           | SPINOZA, . . . . . Principal Caird.      |
| KANT, . . . . . Prof. Wallace.             | BACON: Part I., . . . . . Prof. Nichol.  |
| HAMILTON, . . . . . Prof. Veitch.          | BACON: Part II., . . . . . Prof. Nichol. |
| HEGEL, . . . . . The Master of Balliol.    | LOCKE, . . . . . Prof. Campbell Fraser.  |
| LEIBNIZ, . . . . . John Theodore Mear.     |  |

## FOREIGN CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS. Edited by MRS OLIPHANT. CHEAP RE-ISSUE. In limp cloth, fcap. 8vo, price 1s. each net.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| DANTE, by the Editor.—VOLTAIRE, by General Sir E. B. Hamley, K.O.B.  | OSERVANTES, by the Editor.—CORNWILLE   |
| —FASCAL, by Principal Tulloch.—FETTERBACH, by Henry Reeve, C.B.—GOWTHE, by A. Hayward, Q.C.—MOLIERE, by the Editor and F. Tarter, M.A.—MONTAIGNE, by Rev. W. L. Collins.—RABELAIS, by Sir Walter Besant.—CALDERON, by E. J. Hasell.—SAINT SIMON, by C. W. Collins. | AND RACINE, by Henry M. Trollope.—MADAME DE SEVIERE, by Miss Thackeray.—LA FONTAINE, AND OTHER FRENCH FAULSTERS, by Rev. W. Lucas Collins, M.A.—SCHILLER, by James Sims, M.A.—TASSO, by E. J. Hasell.—BOUSSEAU, by Henry Grey Graham.—ALFRED DE MUSSET, by C. F. Oliphant. |

## ANCIENT CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS. Edited by the REV. W. LUCAS COLLINS, M.A. CHEAP RE-ISSUE. In limp cloth, fcap. 8vo, price 1s. each net.

- |   |
|---|
| Contents of the Series.—HOMER: ILIAD, by the Editor.—HOMER: ODYSSEY, by the Editor.—HERODOTUS, by G. C. Swayne.—CAESAR, by Anthony Trollope.—VIRGIL, by the Editor.—HORACE, by Sir Theodore Martin.—ÆSCHYLUS, by Bishop Copleston.—XENOPHON, by Sir Alex. Grant.—CICERO, by the Editor.—SOPHOCLES, by C. W. Collins.—PLAUTUS, by Rev. A. Church and W. J. Brodribb.—EURIPIDES, by W. B. Donne.—JUVENAL, by M. Walford.—ARISTOPHANES, by the Editor.—HERIOD AND THEOGNIS, by J. Davies.—PLAUTUS AND TERENCE, by the Editor.—TACITUS, by W. B. Donne.—LUCIAN, by the Editor.—PLATO, by C. W. Collins.—GREEK ANTHOLOGY, by Lord Neaves.—LIVY, by the Editor.—OVID, by Rev. A. Church.—CATULLUS, TERILLUS, AND PROPERTIUS, by J. Davies.—DEMOSTHENES, by W. J. Brodribb.—ARISTOTLE, by Sir Alex. Grant.—THUCYDIDES, by the Editor.—LUCRETIUS, by W. H. Mallock.—PINDAR, by Rev. F. D. Morice. |
|---|

**CATALOGUE**  
OF  
**MESSRS BLACKWOOD & SONS'**  
**PUBLICATIONS.**

---

**ACTA SANCTORUM HIBERNIÆ ; Ex Codice Salmanticensi.**  
Nunc primum integrè edita opera CAROLI DE SMEDT et JOSEPHI DE BACKER, e  
Soc. Jesu, Hagiographorum Bollandianorum ; Anctore et Sumptus Largiente  
JOANNE PATRICIO MARCHIONE BOTHEAE. In One handsome 4to Volume, bound in  
half roxburgh, £2, 2s.; in paper cover, 51s. 6d.

**ADAMSON.** The Development of Modern Philosophy. With  
other Lectures and Essays. By ROBERT ADAMSON, LL.D., late Professor of  
Logic in the University of Glasgow. Edited by Professor W. R. BOWLEY, Uni-  
versity of Cambridge. In 2 vols. demy 8vo, 18s. net.

**AFLALO.** A Sketch of the Natural History (Vertebrates) of  
the British Islands. By F. G. AFLALO, F.R.G.S., F.Z.S., Author of 'A Sketch  
of the Natural History of Australia, &c. With numerous illustrations by Lodge  
and Bennett. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**AIKMAN.** Manures and the Principles of Manuring. By C. M.  
AIKMAN, D.Sc., F.R.S.E., &c., formerly Professor of Chemistry, Glasgow  
Veterinary College, and Examiner in Chemistry, University of Glasgow, &c.  
Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. 6d.

**Farmyard Manure :** Its Nature, Composition, and Treatment.  
Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.

**ALISON.**

**History of Europe.** By Sir ARCHIBALD ALISON, Bart., D.C.L.

1. From the Commencement of the French Revolution to  
the Battle of Waterloo.

LIBRARY EDITION, 14 vols., with Portraits. Demy 8vo, £16, 10s.

ANOTHER EDITION, in 20 vols. crown 8vo, £6.

PEOPLE'S EDITION, 13 vols. crown 8vo, £3, 11s.

2. Continuation to the Accession of Louis Napoleon.

LIBRARY EDITION, 8 vols. 8vo, £6, 7s. 6d.

PEOPLE'S EDITION, 8 vols. crown 8vo, 84s.

**Epitome of Alison's History of Europe.** Thirtieth Thou-  
sand, 7s. 6d.

**Atlas to Alison's History of Europe.** By A. Keith Johnston.

LIBRARY EDITION, demy 4to, £3, 2s.

PEOPLE'S EDITION, 51s. 6d.

**ANCIENT CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS.** Edited

by Rev. W. LUCAS COLLINS, M.A. Price 1s. each net. For List of Vols. see p. 2.

**ANDERSON.** Matriculation Roll of St Andrews University.

Edited by J. MAITLAND ANDERSON In 1 vol. demy 8vo.

[In the press.]

**ANNALIST.** *Musings without Method: A Record of 1900 and 1901.* By ANNALIST. Large crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**ATKINSON.** *Local Government in Scotland.* By MABEL ATKINSON, M.A. In 1 vol. demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**AYTOUN.**

*Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers, and other Poems.* By W. EDMONDOTOWN AYTOUN, D.C.L., Professor of Rhetoric and Belles-Lettres in the University of Edinburgh. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
CHEAP EDITION. 1s. Cloth, 1s. 3d.

*An Illustrated Edition of the Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers.*  
From designs by Sir NOEL PATON. Cheaper Edition. Small 4to, 10s. 6d.

**BANKS.** *The Ethics of Work and Wealth.* By D. C. BANKS. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**BARBOUR.** *Thoughts from the Writings of R. W. BARBOUR.* Pott 8vo, limp leather, 2s. 6d. net.

**BARCLAY.** *A New Theory of Organic Evolution.* By JAMES W. BARCLAY. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**BARRINGTON.**

*The King's Fool.* By MICHAEL BARRINGTON. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
*The Reminiscences of Sir Barrington Beaumont, Bart.*  
A Novel. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**BELLESHEIM.** *History of the Catholic Church of Scotland.*  
From the introduction of Christianity to the Present Day. By ALPHONS BELLESHEIM, D.D., Canon of Aix-la-Chapelle. Translated, with Notes and Additions, by D. OSWALD HUNTER BLAIR, O.S.B., Monk of Port Augustus. Cheap Edition. Complete in 4 vols. demy 8vo, with Maps. Price 21s. net.

**BLACKBURN.** *A Burgher Quixote.* By DOUGLAS BLACKBURN, Author of 'Prinsloo of Prinsloosdorp.' Second Impression. With Frontispiece. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**BLACKWOOD.**

*Annals of a Publishing House. William Blackwood and his Sons; Their Magazine and Friends.* By MRS OLIPHANT. With Four Portraits. Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Vols. I. and II. 5s. 2s.

*Annals of a Publishing House. Vol. III.* John Blackwood. By his Daughter MRS BLACKWOOD FORSTER. With 2 Portraits and View of Strath-tyrum. Demy 8vo, 21s. CHEAP EDITION. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*Blackwood's Magazine, from Commencement in 1817 to October 1904.* Nos. 1 to 1068, forming 176 Volumes.

*Tales from Blackwood. First Series. Price One Shilling each, in Paper Cover. Sold separately at all Railway Bookstalls.*

They may also be had bound in 12 vols., cloth, 18s. Half calf, richly gilt, 30s.  
Or the 12 vols. in 6, roxburghs, 21s. Half red morocco, 28s.

*Tales from Blackwood. Second Series. Complete in Twenty-four Shilling Parts. Handsomely bound in 12 vols., cloth, 30s. In leather back, roxburghs style, 87s. 6d. Half calf, gilt, 53s. 6d. Half morocco, 55s.*

*Tales from Blackwood. Third Series. Complete in Twelve Shilling Parts. Handsomely bound in 6 vols., cloth, 15s.; and in 12 vols. cloth, 18s. The 6 vols. in roxburghs 21s. Half calf, 25s. Half morocco, 28s.*

*Travel, Adventure, and Sport.* From 'Blackwood's Magazine.' Uniform with 'Tales from Blackwood.' In Twelve Parts, each price 1s. Handsomely bound in 6 vols., cloth, 15s. And in half calf, 25s.

*New Educational Series. See separate Educational Catalogue.*

**BLACKWOOD.**

**New Uniform Series of Novels (Copyright).**

Crown 8vo, cloth. Price 2s. 6d. each. Now ready:—

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>WENDERHOLME. By P. G. Hamerton.<br/> <b>THE STORY OF MARGRÉDEL.</b> By D. Scottar Meldrum.<br/> <b>MISS MARJORIBANKS.</b> By Mrs Oliphant.<br/> <b>THE PERPETUAL CURATE, and THE RECTOR</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>SALEM CHAPEL, and THE DOCTOR'S FAMILY.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>A SENSITIVE PLANT.</b> By E. D. Gerard.<br/> <b>LADY LEE'S WIDOWHOOD.</b> By General Sir E. B. Hamley.<br/> <b>KATHI STEWART, and other Stories.</b> By Mrs Oliphant.<br/> <b>VALENTINE and HIS BROTHERS.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>SONS and DAUGHTERS.</b> By the Same.</p> | <p><b>MARMORNE.</b> By P. G. Hamerton.<br/> <b>REATA.</b> By E. D. Gerard.<br/> <b>BEGGAR MY NEIGHBOUR.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>THE WATERS OF HERCULES.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>FAIR TO SEE.</b> By L. W. M. Lockhart.<br/> <b>MINE IS THINE.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>DOUBLES and QUITS.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>ALTORA PETO.</b> By Laurence Oliphant.<br/> <b>PICCADILLY.</b> By the Same. With Illustrations.<br/> <b>LADY BARY.</b> By D. Gerard.<br/> <b>THE BLACKSMITH OF VON.</b> By Paul Oushing.<br/> <b>MY TRIVIAL LIFE and MISFORTUNE.</b> By A Plain Woman.<br/> <b>POOR NELLIE.</b> By the Same.</p> |
|---|---|

**Standard Novels. Uniform in size and binding. Each complete in one Volume.**

**FLORIN SERIES, Illustrated Boards. Bound in Cloth, 2s. 6d.**

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p><b>TOM CRINGLE'S LOG.</b> By Michael Scott.<br/> <b>THE CRUISE OF THE MIDGE.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>OYRIL THORNTON.</b> By Captain Hamilton.<br/> <b>ANNALS OF THE PARISH.</b> By John Galt.<br/> <b>THE PROVOST, &amp;c.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>SIR ANDREW WYLIE.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>THE ENTAIL.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>MISS MOLLY.</b> By Beatrice May Butt.<br/> <b>REGINALD DALTON.</b> By J. G. Lockhart.</p> | <p><b>PEN OWEN.</b> By Dean Hook.<br/> <b>ADAM BLAIR.</b> By J. G. Lockhart.<br/> <b>LADY LEE'S WIDOWHOOD.</b> By General Sir E. B. Hamley.<br/> <b>SALEM CHAPEL.</b> By Mrs Oliphant.<br/> <b>THE PERPETUAL CURATE.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>MISS MARJORIBANKS.</b> By the Same.<br/> <b>JOHN ! A Love Story.</b> By the Same.</p> |
|---|---|

**SHILLING SERIES, Illustrated Cover. Bound in Cloth, 1s. 6d.**

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p><b>THE RECTOR, and THE DOCTOR'S FAMILY.</b> By Mrs Oliphant.<br/> <b>THE LIFE OF MANSIE WAUGH.</b> By D. M. Moir.<br/> <b>PENINSULAR SCENES and SKETCHES.</b> By F. Hardman.</p> | <p><b>SIR FRISSELL PUMPKIN, NIGHTS AT MISS, &amp;c.</b><br/> <b>THE SUBALTERN.</b><br/> <b>LIFE IN THE FAR WEST.</b> By G. F. Buxton.<br/> <b>VALERIUS: A Roman Story.</b> By J. G. Lockhart.</p> |
|---|---|

**BON GAULTIER'S BOOK OF BALLADS.** A new Edition, with Autobiographical Introduction by Sir THEODORE MARTIN, K.C.B. With Illustrations by Doyle, Leech, and Crowquill. Small quarto, 5s. net.

**BOWHILL.** Questions and Answers in the Theory and Practice of Military Topography. By Major J. H. BOWHILL. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net. Portfolio containing 34 working plans and diagrams, 2s. 6d. net.

**BROWN and NISBET.** The Forester: A Practical Treatise on the Planting and Tending of Forest-trees and the General Management of Woodlands. By JAMES BROWN, LL.D. Seventh Edition, Enlarged. Edited by JOHN NISBET, D.Sc., Author of 'British Forest Trees,' &c. In 2 vols. royal 8vo, with 350 Illustrations. In preparation. 42s. net.

**BROOKS.** Daughters of Desperation. By HILDEGARD BROOKS. Small crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**BRUCE.** Our Heritage: Individual, Social, and Religious. By W. S. BRUCE, D.D., Croall Lecturer for 1903. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**BUCHAN.** The First Things. Studies in the Embryology of Religion and Natural Theology. By Rev. JOHN BUCHAN, John Knox Church, Glasgow. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**BUCHAN.**

*The African Colony : Studies in the Reconstruction.* By JOHN BUCHAN. 1 vol. demy 8vo, 15s. net.

*The Watcher by the Threshold, and other Tales.* Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**BURBIDGE.**

*Domestic Floriculture, Window Gardening, and Floral Decorations.* Being Practical Directions for the Propagation, Culture, and Arrangement of Plants and Flowers as Domestic Ornaments. By F. W. BURBIDGE. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, with numerous Illustrations, 7s. 6d.

**BURTON.**

*The History of Scotland : From Agricola's Invasion to the Extinction of the last Jacobite Insurrection.* By JOHN HILL BURTON, D.C.L., Historiographer-Royal for Scotland. Cheaper Edition. In 8 vols. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. each.

*The Book-Hunter.* A New Edition, with specially designed Title-page and Cover by JOSEPH BROWN. Printed on antique laid paper. Post 8vo, 8s. 6d.

*The Scot Abroad.* Uniform with 'The Book-Hunter.' Post 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**BUTE.**

*The Roman Breviary : Reformed by Order of the Holy Œcumenical Council of Trent ; Published by Order of Pope St Pius V. ; and Revised by Clement VIII. and Urban VIII. ; together with the Offices since granted.* Translated out of Latin into English by JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T. New Edition, Revised and Enlarged. In 4 vols. crown 8vo, and in 1 vol. crown 4to. [In the press.]

*The Altus of St Columba.* With a Prose Paraphrase and Notes By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T. In paper cover, 2s. 6d.

*Sermones, Fratris Adæ, Ordinis Præmonstratensis, &c.* Twenty-eight Discourses of Adam Scotus of Whithorn, hitherto unpublished ; to which is added a Collection of Notes by the same, illustrative of the rule of St Augustine. Edited, at the desire of the late MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., LL.D., &c., by WALTER DE GRAY BIRCH, LL.D., F.S.A., of the British Museum, &c. Royal 8vo, 25s. net.

*Catalogue of a Collection of Original MSS. formerly belonging to the Holy Office of the Inquisition in the Canary Islands.* Prepared under the direction of the late MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., LL.D., by WALTER DE GRAY BIRCH, LL.D., F.S.A. 2 vols. royal 8vo, £3, 3s. net.

**BUTE, MACPHAIL, AND LONSDALE.** *The Arms of the Royal and Parliamentary Burghs of Scotland.* By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., J. R. N. MACPHAIL, and H. W. LONSDALE. With 181 Engravings on wood, and 11 other Illustrations. Crown 4to. £2, 2s. net.

**BUTE, STEVENSON, AND LONSDALE.** *The Arms of the Baronial and Police Burghs of Scotland.* By JOHN, MARQUESS OF BUTE, K.T., J. H. STEVENSON, and H. W. LONSDALE. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 4to, £2, 2s. net.

**BUTT.** *Miss Molly.* By BEATRICE MAY BUTT. Cheap Edition, 2s.

**CAIRD.** *Sermons.* By JOHN CAIRD, D.D., Principal of the University of Glasgow. Seventeenth Thousand. Fcap. 8vo, 6s.

**CALDWELL.** *Schopenhauer's System in its Philosophical Significance* (the Shaw Fellowship Lectures, 1898). By WILLIAM CALDWELL, M.A., D.Sc., Professor of Moral and Social Philosophy, Northwestern University, U.S.A.; formerly Assistant to the Professor of Logic and Metaphysics, Edin., and Examiner in Philosophy in the University of St Andrews. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**CALLWELL.**

*The Effect of Maritime Command on Land Campaigns since Waterloo.* By Lt.-Col. C. E. CALLWELL, R.G.A. With Plans. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

*Tactics of To-day.* Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

*Military Operations and Maritime Preponderance: Their Relations and Interdependence.* Demy 8vo. [In the press.]

**CAMPBELL.** *Balmerino and its Abbey. A Parish History,* With Notices of the Adjacent District. By JAMES CAMPBELL, D.D., F.R.S. Scot., Minister of Balmerino; Author of 'A History of the Celtic Church in Scotland,' A New Edition. With an Appendix of Illustrative Documents, a Map of the Parish, and upwards of 40 Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 80s. net.

**CAREY.**

*Monsieur Martin: A Romance of the Great Northern War.* By WYMOND CAREY. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*For the White Rose.* Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CARLYLE.** *A History of Mediæval Political Theory in the West.* By R. W. CARLYLE, C.I.E., Balliol College, Oxford; and A. J. CARLYLE, M.A., Chaplain and Lecturer (late Fellow) of University College, Oxford. In 3 vols. demy 8vo. Vol. I.—A History of Political Theory from the Roman Lawyers of the Second Century to the Political Writers of the Ninth. By A. J. CARLYLE. 15s. net.

**CHESNEY.** *The Dilemma.* By General Sir GEORGE CHESNEY, K.C.B. A New Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s.

**CHRONICLES OF WESTERLY.** *A Provincial Sketch.* By the Author of 'Culmshire Folk,' 'John Oriebar,' &c. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CHURCH SERVICE SOCIETY.**

*A Book of Common Order: being Forms of Worship issued by the Church Service Society.* Seventh Edition, carefully revised. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, cloth, 8s. 6d.; French morocco, 8s. Also in 2 vols. crown 8vo, cloth, 4s.; French morocco, 6s. 6d.

*Daily Offices for Morning and Evening Prayer throughout the Week.* Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

*Order of Divine Service for Children.* Issued by the Church Service Society. With Scottish Hymnal. Cloth, 2d.

**CLIFFORD.**

*Sally: A Study; and other Tales of the Outskirts.* By HUGH CLIFFORD, O.M.G. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Bush-Whacking, and other Sketches.* Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**CLODD.** Thomas Henry Huxley. "Modern English Writers."  
By EDWARD CLODD. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**CLOUSTON.**

The Lunatic at Large. By J. STOREE CLOUSTON. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. PEOPLE'S EDITION, royal 8vo, 6d.

The Adventures of M. D'Haricot. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. POPULAR EDITION, 6d.

Our Lady's Inn. Crown 8vo, 6s.

Garmiscath. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**COLLINS.**

A Scholar of his College. By W. E. W. COLLINS. Crown 8vo, 6s.

The Don and the Undergraduate. A Tale of St Hilary's College, Oxford. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

Episodes of Rural Life. Crown 8vo 6s.

**CONRAD.**

Lord Jim. A Tale. By JOSEPH CONRAD, Author of 'The Nigger of the Narcissus,' 'An Outcast of the Islands,' 'Tales of Unrest,' &c. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

Youth: A Narrative; and Two other Stories. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**COOPER.** Liturgy of 1637, commonly called Laud's Liturgy. Edited by the Rev. Professor COOPER, D.D., Glasgow. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**CORNFORD.** R. L. Stevenson. "Modern English Writers."  
By L. COPE CORNFORD. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**COTTON.** The Company of Death. By ALBERT LOUIS COTTON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**COUNTY HISTORIES OF SCOTLAND.** In demy 8vo volumes of about 350 pp. each. With Maps. Price 7s. 6d. net.

Prehistoric Scotland and its Place in European Civilisation. Being a General Introduction to the "County Histories of Scotland." By ROBERT MUNRO, M.A., M.D., Author of 'Prehistoric Problems,' 'The Lake Dwellings of Europe,' &c. With numerous illustrations.

Fife and Kinross. By ÆNEAS J. G. MACKAY, LL.D., Sheriff of these Counties.

Dumfries and Galloway. By Sir HERBERT MAXWELL, Bart., M.P. Second Edition.

Moray and Nairn. By CHARLES RAMPINI, LL.D., Sheriff of Dumfries and Galloway.

Inverness. By J. CAMERON LEES, D.D.



COUNTY HISTORIES OF SCOTLAND..

Roxburgh, Selkirk, and Peebles. By Sir GEORGE DOUGLAS,  
Bart.

Aberdeen and Banff. By WILLIAM WATT, Editor of Aberdeen  
'Daily Free Press.'

Perth and Clackmannan. By JOHN CHISHOLM, M.A., Advocate.  
[In the press.]

Edinburgh and Linlithgow. By WILLIAM KIRK DICKSON,  
Advocate. [In the press.]

CRAIK. A Century of Scottish History. From the Days before  
the '45 to those within living Memory. By Sir HENRY CRAIK, K.C.B., M.A.  
(Oxon.), Hon. LL.D. (Glasgow). 2 vols. demy 8vo, 80s. net.

CRAWFORD. *Saracinesca*. By F. MARION CRAWFORD, Author  
of 'Mr Isaac,' &c., &c. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d. Also at 6d.

CRAWFORD. The Mysteries of Christianity. By the late  
THOMAS J. CRAWFORD, D.D., Professor of Divinity in the University of Edin-  
burgh. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

CREED. The Fight. By SYBIL CREED. Crown 8vo, 6s.

CROSS. The Rake's Progress in Finance. By J. W. CROSS  
Crown 8vo, 2s. net.

CUMMING.

Memories. By C. F. GORDON CUMMING. Demy 8vo. Illus-  
trated, 20s.

At Home in Fiji. Post 8vo. Illustrated. Cheap Edition, 6s.

A Lady's Cruise in a French Man-of-War. Post 8vo. Illus-  
trated. Cheap Edition. 6s.

Fire-Fountains. 2 vols. post 8vo. Illustrated, 25s.

Granite Crags. Post 8vo. Illustrated. Cheap Edition. 6s.

Wanderings in China. Small post 8vo. Cheap Edition. 6s.

DESCARTES. The Method, Meditations, and Principles of Philo-  
sophy of Descartes. Translated from the Original French and Latin. With a  
New Introductory Essay, Historical and Critical, on the Cartesian Philosophy  
By Professor VATCH, LL.D., Glasgow University. Eleventh Edition. 6s. 6d.

DODDS AND MACPHERSON. The Licensing Acts (Scotland)  
Consolidation and Amendment Act, 1903. Annotated by Mr J. M. DODDS, of  
the Scottish Office; Joint-Editor of the 'Parish Council Guide for Scotland,' and  
Mr EWAN MACPHERSON, Advocate, Legal Secretary to the Lord Advocate. In  
1 vol. crown 8vo, 5s. net.

DOUGLAS.

The Ethics of John Stuart Mill. By CHARLES DOUGLAS,  
M.A., D.Sc., M.P., late Lecturer in Moral Philosophy, and Assistant to the Pro-  
fessor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

John Stuart Mill: A Study of his Philosophy. Crown 8vo,  
4s. 6d. net.

ECCOTT. Fortune's Castaway. By W. J. ECCOTT. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**ELIOT.**

**George Eliot's Life, Related in Her Letters and Journals.** Arranged and Edited by her husband, J. W. CROSS. With Portraits and other Illustrations. Third Edition. 8 vols. post 8vo, 42s.

**George Eliot's Life. With Portrait and other Illustrations.** New Edition, in one volume. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**Works of George Eliot (Library Edition).** 10 volumes, small demy 8vo. With Photogravure Frontispieces, from Drawings by William Hatherell, R.I., Edgar Bundy, R.I., Byam Shaw, R.I., A. A. Van Arcoy, Maurice Greiffenhagen, Claude A. Shepperson, R.I., E. J. Sullivan, and Max Cowper. Gilt top, 10s. 6d. net each volume.

ADAM BEDR.  
THE MILL ON THE FLOSS.  
ROMOLA.  
SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE.  
SILAS MARNER; BROTHER JACOB;  
THE LIFTED VEIL.

FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL.  
MIDDLEMARCH.  
DANIEL DERONDA.  
THE SPANISH GYPSY; JUBAL.  
ESSAYS; THEOPHRASTUS SUCH.

**Life and Works of George Eliot (Warwick Edition).** 14 volumes, cloth, limp, gilt top, 2s. net per volume; leather, limp, gilt top, 2s. 6d. net per volume; leather, gilt top, with book-marker, 3s. net per volume.

ADAM BEDR. 826 pp.  
THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. 828 pp.  
FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL. 718 pp.  
ROMOLA. 900 pp.  
SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE. 624 pp.  
SILAS MARNER; BROTHER JACOB; THE  
LIFTED VEIL. 560 pp.

MIDDLEMARCH. 2 vols. 664 and 630 pp.  
DANIEL DERONDA. 2 vols. 616 and  
636 pp.  
THE SPANISH GYPSY; JUBAL.  
ESSAYS; THEOPHRASTUS SUCH.  
LIFE. 2 vols., 626 and 580 pp.

**Works of George Eliot (Standard Edition).** 21 volumes, crown 8vo. In buckram cloth, gilt top, 2s. 6d. per vol.; or in roxburgh binding, 3s. 6d. per vol.

ADAM BEDR. 3 vols.—THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. 3 vols.—FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL. 3 vols.—ROMOLA. 3 vols.—SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE. 3 vols.—MIDDLEMARCH. 3 vols.—DANIEL DERONDA. 3 vols.—SILAS MARNER. 1 vol.—JUBAL. 1 vol.—THE SPANISH GYPSY. 1 vol.—ESSAYS. 1 vol.—THEOPHRASTUS SUCH. 1 vol.

**Life and Works of George Eliot (Cabinet Edition).** 24 volumes, crown 8vo, price 46s. Also to be had handsomely bound in half and full calf. The Volumes are sold separately, bound in cloth, price 5s. each.

**Novels by George Eliot. Popular Copyright Edition.** In new uniform binding, price 3s. 6d. each.

ADAM BEDR.  
THE MILL ON THE FLOSS.  
SCENES OF CLERICAL LIFE.  
ROMOLA.  
FELIX HOLT, THE RADICAL.

SILAS MARNER; THE LIFTED VEIL;  
BROTHER JACOB.  
MIDDLEMARCH.  
DANIEL DERONDA.

**Essays. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.**

**Impressions of Theophrastus Such. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.**

**The Spanish Gypsy. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.**

**The Legend of Jubal, and other Poems, Old and New. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.**

**Silas Marner. New Edition, with Illustrations by Reginald Birch. Crown 8vo, 6s. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper cover, price 6d.**

**Scenes of Clerical Life. Pocket Edition, 3 vols. post 8vo, 1s. net each; bound in leather, 1s. 6d. net each. Illustrated Edition, with 20 Illustrations by H. R. Millar, crown 8vo, 2s.; paper covers, 1s. People's Edition, royal 8vo. in paper cover, price 6d.**

**Felix Holt. People's Edition. Royal 8vo, in paper cover, 6d.**

**ELIOT.**

**Adam Bede.** Pocket Edition. In 1 vol. pott 8vo, 1s. net; bound in leather, in 3 vols., 4s. 6d. net. People's Edition, royal 8vo, in paper cover, price 6d. New Edition, crown 8vo, paper cover, 1s.; crown 8vo, with Illustrations, cloth, 2s; pott 8vo, 1s. net.

**The Mill on the Floss.** Pocket Edition, 2 vols. pott 8vo, cloth, 2s. net; limp leather, 4s. 6d. net. People's Edition, royal 8vo, in paper cover, price 6d. New Edition, paper covers, 1s.; cloth, 2s.

**Romola.** People's Edition. Royal 8vo, in paper cover, price 6d.

**Silas Marner; Brother Jacob; Lifted Veil.** Pocket Edition. Pott 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d. net; limp leather, 2s. 3d. net.

**Wise, Witty, and Tender Sayings, in Prose and Verse.** Selected from the Works of GEORGE ELIOT. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**ELLIS.** **Barbara Winslow, Rebel.** By BETH ELLIS. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**ELTON.** **The Augustan Ages.** "Periods of European Literature." By OLIVER ELTON, B.A., Lecturer in English Literature, Owen's College, Manchester. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**FAHIE.** **A History of Wireless Telegraphy.** Including some Bare-wire Proposals for Subaqueous Telegraphs. By J. J. FAHIE, Member of the Institution of Electrical Engineers, London, and of the Société Internationale des Electriciens, Paris; Author of 'A History of Electric Telegraphy to the Year 1887,' &c. With Illustrations. Third Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FAITHS OF THE WORLD, The.** A Concise History of the Great Religious Systems of the World. By various Authors. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**FERGUSON.** **Scots Poems.** By ROBERT FERGUSON. With Photogravure Portrait. Pott 8vo, gilt top, bound in cloth, 1s. net; leather, 1s. 6d. net.

**FERRIER.**

**Philosophical Works of the late James F. Ferrier, B.A.** Oxon., Professor of Moral Philosophy and Political Economy, St Andrews. New Edition. Edited by Sir ALEXANDER GRANT, Bart., D.C.L., and Professor LUXIMIEROW. 3 vols. crown 8vo, 24s. 6d.

**Institutes of Metaphysic.** Third Edition. 10s. 6d.

**Lectures on the Early Greek Philosophy.** 4th Edition. 10s. 6d.

**Philosophical Remains, including the Lectures on Early Greek Philosophy.** New Edition. 2 vols. 24s.

**FISHER.** **One London Season.** By CAROLINE FISHER. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FLINT.**

**Philosophy as Scientia Scientiarum.** A History of Classifications of the Sciences. By ROBERT FLINT, Corresponding Member of the Institute of France, Hon. Member of the Royal Society of Palermo, Professor in the University of Edinburgh, &c. 12s. 6d. net.

**Studies on Theological, Biblical, and other Subjects.** 7s. 6d. net.

**Historical Philosophy in France and French Belgium and Switzerland.** 8vo, 21s.

**Agnosticism.** Demy 8vo, 18s. net.

**Theism.** Being the Baird Lecture for 1876. Tenth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**Anti-Theistic Theories.** Being the Baird Lecture for 1877. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**Sermons and Addresses.** Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**FORD.** *A History of Cambridge University Cricket Club.* By W. J. FORD, Author of 'A History of Middlesex County Cricket,' &c. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**FOREIGN CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS.** Edited by Mrs OLIPHANT. Price 1s. each net. *For List of Volumes, see page 2.*

**FORREST.**

*History of the Indian Mutiny.* By G. W. FORREST, C.I.E., Ex-Director of Records, Government of India. 2 vols. demy 8vo, 88s. net.

*Sepoy Generals: Wellington to Roberts.* With Portraits. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FOULIS.** *Earchie: My Droll Friend.* By HUGH FOULIS. 1s. net.

**FRANKLIN.** *My Brilliant Career.* By MILES FRANKLIN. Fourth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**FRASER.**

*Philosophy of Theism. Being the Gifford Lectures delivered before the University of Edinburgh in 1894-96.* By ALEXANDER CAMPBELL FRASER, D.C.L. Oxford; Emeritus Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in the University of Edinburgh. Second Edition, Revised. Post 8vo, 6s. 6d. net.

*Biographia Philosophica.* In 1 vol. demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**FRENCH COOKERY FOR ENGLISH HOMES.** Third Impression. Crown 8vo, limp cloth, 2s. 6d. Also in limp leather, 3s.

**GALLOWAY.** *Studies in the Philosophy of Religion.* By GEORGE GALLOWAY, B.D. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**GENERAL ASSEMBLY OF THE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND.**

*Scottish Hymnal, With Appendix Incorporated.* Published for use in Churches by Authority of the General Assembly. 1. Large type, cloth, red edges, 2s. 6d.; French morocco, 4s. 2. Bourgeois type, limp cloth, 1s.; French morocco, 2s. 3. Nonpareil type, cloth, red edges, 6d.; French morocco, 1s. 4d. 4. Paper covers, 8d. 5. Sunday-School Edition, paper covers, 1d., cloth, 3d. No. 1, bound with the Psalms and Paraphrases, French morocco, 8s. No. 2, bound with the Psalms and Paraphrases, cloth, 2s.; French morocco, 3s.

*Prayers for Social and Family Worship.* Prepared by a Special Committee of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland. Entirely New Edition, Revised and Enlarged. Fcap. 8vo, red edges, 2s.

*Prayers for Family Worship. A Selection of Four Weeks' Prayers.* New Edition. Authorised by the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland. Fcap. 8vo, red edges, 1s. 6d.

*One Hundred Prayers.* Prepared by the Committee on Aids to Devotion. 16mo, cloth limp, 6d.

*Morning and Evening Prayers for Affixing to Bibles.* Prepared by the Committee on Aids to Devotion. 1d. for 6, or 1s. per 100.

*Prayers for Soldiers and Sailors.* Prepared by the Committee on Aids to Devotion. Thirtieth Thousand. 16mo, cloth limp. 3d. net.

*Prayers for Sailors and Fisher-Folk.* Prepared and Published by Instruction of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**GERARD.**

**Reata: What's in a Name.** By E. D. GERARD. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**Beggar my Neighbour.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**The Waters of Hercules.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**GERARD.**

**One Year.** By DOROTHEA GERARD (Madame Longard de Longgarde). Crown 8vo, 6s.

**The Impediment.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**A Forgotten Sin.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**A Spotless Reputation.** Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**The Wrong Man.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Lady Baby.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**GIBBON.** **Souls in Bondage.** By PERCEVAL GIBBON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GILLESPIE.** **The Humour of Scottish Life.** By Very Rev. JOHN GILLESPIE, LL.D. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**GLEIG.** **Personal Reminiscences of the First Duke of Wellington,** with Sketches of some of his Guests and Contemporaries. By Rev. G. R. GLEIG, author of 'The Subaltern.' Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**GOODALL.** **Association Football.** By JOHN GOODALL. Edited by S. ARCHIBALD DE BEAR. With Diagrams. Fcap. 8vo, 1s.

**GORDON.** **The Sikhs.** By General Sir JOHN J. H. GORDON, K.C.B. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**GOUDIE.** **The Celtic and Scandinavian Antiquities of Shetland.** By GILBERT GOUDIE, F.S.A. Scot. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**GRAHAM.**

**Manual of the Elections (Scot.) (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1890.** With Analysis, Relative Act of Sederunt, Appendix containing the Corrupt Practices Acts of 1883 and 1885, and Copious Index. By J. EDWARD GRAHAM, Advocate. 8vo, 4s. 6d.

**A Manual of the Acts relating to Education in Scotland.** (Founded on that of the late Mr Craig Sellar.) Demy 8vo, 18s.

**GRAND.**

**A Domestic Experiment.** By SARAH GRAND, Author of 'The Heavenly Twins,' 'Ideals: A Study from Life.' Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Singularly Deluded.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GREEN, E. M.** **Elizabeth Grey.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**GRIER.**

**In Furthest Ind.** *The Narrative of Mr. EDWARD CARLYON of Ellswether, in the County of Northampton, and late of the Honourable East India Company's Service, Gentleman. Wrote by his own hand in the year of grace 1697. Edited, with a few Explanatory Notes. By SYDNEY C. GRIER. Post 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**His Excellency's English Governess.** *Third Impression. Cr. 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper cover, 6d.*

**An Uncrowned King: A Romance of High Politics.** *Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**Peace with Honour.** *Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**A Crowned Queen: The Romance of a Minister of State.** *Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**Like Another Helen.** *Second Impression Cr. 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**The Kings of the East: A Romance of the near Future.** *Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s.*

**The Warden of the Marches.** *Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheap Edition, 2s. Popular Edition, 6d.*

**The Prince of the Captivity.** *Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.*

**The Advanced-Guard.** *Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.*

**The Great Proconsul: The Memoirs of Mrs Hester Ward,** *formerly in the family of the Hon. Warren Hastings, Esquire, late Governor-General of India. Crown 8vo, 6s.*

**The Letters of Warren Hastings to his Wife.** *Crown 8vo.*

**GROOT.** *Jan Van Dyck. By J. MORGAN-DE-GROOT. Crown 8vo, 6s.*

**HALDANE.** *How we Escaped from Pretoria. By Lieut.-Colonel AYLMER HALDANE, D.S.O., 2nd Battalion Gordon Highlanders. New Edition, revised and enlarged. With numerous Illustrations, Plans, and Map. Crown 8vo, 1s.*

**HALIBURTON.** *Horace in Homespun. By HUGH HALIBURTON. A New Edition, containing additional Poems. With 26 Illustrations by A. S. Boyd. Post 8vo, 6s. net.*

**HAMILTON.**

**Lectures on Metaphysics.** *By Sir WILLIAM HAMILTON, Bart., Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in the University of Edinburgh. Edited by the Rev. H. L. MANNEL, B.D., LL.D., Dean of St Paul's; and JOHN VERTON, M.A., LL.D., Professor of Logic and Rhetoric, Glasgow. Seventh Edition. 2 vols. 8vo, 24s.*

**Lectures on Logic.** *Edited by the SAME. Third Edition, Revised. 2 vols., 24s.*

**HAMLEY.**

**The Operations of War Explained and Illustrated.** *By General Sir EDWARD BRUCE HAMLEY, K.C.B., K.C.M.G. Second Edition of Fifth Edition. With Maps and Plans. 4to, 30s. Also in 2 parts: Part I., 10s. 6d.; Part II., 21s.*

**HAMLEY.**

Shakespeare's Funeral, and other Papers. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

Thomas Carlyle: An Essay. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

On Outposts. Second Edition. 8vo, 2s.

Wellington's Career; A Military and Political Summary. Crown 8vo, 2s.

Lady Lee's Widowhood. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s.

Our Poor Relations. A Philozoic Essay. With Illustrations, chiefly by Ernest Griset. Crown 8vo, cloth gilt, 5s. 6d.

**HANNAY.** The Later Renaissance. "Periods of European Literature." By DAVID HANNAY. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**HARRADEN.**

Ships that Pass in the Night. By BEATRICE HARRADEN. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s. 6d.

The Fowler. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. People's Edition, paper covers, 6d.

In Varying Moods: Short Stories. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s. 6d.

Hilda Strafford, and The Remittance Man. Two Californian Stories. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

Untold Tales of the Past. With 40 Illustrations by H. R. Millar. Square crown 8vo, gilt top, 5s. net.

Katharine Frensham. Crown 8vo, 6s. Popular Edition, 6d.

**HARRIS.**

The Disappearance of Dick. By WALTER B. HARRIS. With 17 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 5s.

The Career of Harold Ensleigh. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**HARTLEY.** Wild Sport with Gun, Rifle, and Salmon-Rod. By GILFRID W. HARTLEY. With numerous Illustrations in photogravure and half-tone from drawings by G. E. LODGE and others. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**HAY-NEWTON.** Readings on the Evolution of Religion. By Mrs F. HAY-NEWTON. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**HEMANS.**

The Poetical Works of Mrs Hemans. Copyright Edition. Royal 8vo, with Engravings, cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.

Select Poems of Mrs Hemans. Fcap., cloth, gilt edges, 2s.

**HENDERSON.** The Young Estate Manager's Guide. By RICHARD HENDERSON, Member (by Examination) of the Royal Agricultural Society of England, the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland, and the Surveyors' Institution. With an Introduction by R. Patrick Wright, F.R.S.E., Professor of Agriculture, Glasgow and West of Scotland Technical College. With Plans and Diagrams. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**HENDERSON.** The Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border. By Sir WALTER SCOTT. A New Edition. Edited by T. F. Henderson, Author of 'A History of Scottish Vernacular Literature.' With a New Portrait of Sir Walter Scott. In 4 vols., demy 8vo, £2, 2s. net.

- HERFORD.** Browning (Modern English Writers). By Professor HERFORD. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- HOME PRAYERS.** By Ministers of the Church of Scotland and Members of the Church Service Society. Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo, 2s.
- HUNT.** A Handy Vocabulary: English-Afrikaner, Afrikaner-English. For the Use of English-speaking People in South Africa. By G. M. G. HUNT. Small 8vo, 1s.
- HUTCHINSON.** Hints on the Game of Golf. By HORACE G. HUTCHINSON. Twelfth Edition, Revised. Fcap. 8vo, cloth, 1s.
- HUTTON.**  
 Frederic Uvedale. By EDWARD HUTTON. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
 Italy and the Italians. With Illustrations. Second Edition. Large crown 8vo, 6s.
- IDDESLEIGH.** Life, Letters, and Diaries of Sir Stafford Northcote, First Earl of Iddesleigh. By ANDREW LANG. With Three Portraits and a View of Fynes. Third Edition. 3 vols. post 8vo, 51s. 6d.  
 POPULAR EDITION. With Portrait and View of Fynes. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.
- INNES.**  
 Free Church Union Case. Judgment of the House of Lords. With Introduction by A. TAYLOR INNES. Demy 8vo, 1s. net.  
 The Law of Creeds in Scotland. A Treatise on the Relations of Churches in Scotland, Established and not Established, to the Civil Law. Demy 8vo, 10s. net.
- INTELLIGENCE OFFICER.**  
 On the Heels of De Wet. By THE INTELLIGENCE OFFICER. Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper cover, 6d.  
 The Boy Galloper. With Illustrations. In 1 vol. cr. 8vo, 6s.
- IRONS.** The Psychology of Ethics. By DAVID IRONS, M.A., Ph.D., Professor of Philosophy in Bryn Mawr College, Penn. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.
- JAMES.** William Wetmore Story and his Friends. From Letters, Diaries, and Recollections. By HENRY JAMES. With 2 Portraits. In two vols. post 8vo, 24s. net.
- JAMES.**  
 Modern Strategy. By Lieut.-Col. WALTER H. JAMES, P.S.C., late R.E. With 6 Maps. Second Edition, thoroughly revised and brought up to date. Royal 8vo, 16s. net.  
 The Development of Tactics from 1740 to the Present Day. Demy 8vo. [In the press.]
- JOHNSTON.**  
 The Chemistry of Common Life. By Professor J. F. W. JOHNSTON. New Edition, Revised. By ARTHUR HERBERT CHURCH, M.A. OXON. Author of 'Food: its Sources, Constituents, and Uses,' &c. With Maps and 102 Engravings. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.  
 Elements of Agricultural Chemistry. An entirely New Edition from the Edition by Sir CHARLES A. CAMERON, M.D., F.R.C.S.I. &c. Revised and brought down to date by C. M. AITCHMAN, M.A., B.Sc., F.R.S.E., Professor of Chemistry, Glasgow Veterinary College. 17th Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. 6d.  
 Catechism of Agricultural Chemistry. An entirely New Edition from the Edition by Sir CHARLES A. CAMERON. Revised and Enlarged by C. M. AITCHMAN, M.A., &c. 95th Thousand. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s.



**JOHNSTON.** *Agricultural Holdings (Scotland) Acts, 1883 to 1900; and the Ground Game Act, 1880.* With Notes, and Summary of Procedure, &c. By CHRISTOPHER N JOHNSTON, M.A., Advocate. Fifth Edition. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**JOKAL** *Timar's Two Worlds.* By MAURUS JOKAL. Authorised Translation by Mrs HEGAN KENNARD. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**KENNEDY.** *Hurrah for the Life of a Sailor! Fifty Years in the Royal Navy.* By Admiral Sir WILLIAM KENNEDY, K.C.B. With Illustrations from Sketches by the Author. Fifth Impression. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d.  
CHEAPER EDITION, small demy 8vo, 6s.

**KER.** *The Dark Ages. "Periods of European Literature."* By Professor W. P. KER. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**KERR.**

*Memories: Grave and Gay.* By JOHN KERR, LL.D. With Portrait and other Illustrations. Cheaper Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

*Other Memories: Old and New.* Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d. net.

**KINGLAKE.**

*History of the Invasion of the Crimea.* By A. W. KINGLAKE. Complete in 9 vols., crown 8vo. Cheap reissue at 3s. 6d. each.

— *Abridged Edition for Military Students.* Revised by Lieut.-Col. Sir GEORGE SYDENHAM CLARKE, K.C.M.G., R.E. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

— *Atlas to accompany above.* Folio, 9s. net.

*History of the Invasion of the Crimea.* Demy 8vo. Vol. VI. *Winter Troubles.* With a Map, 16s. Vols. VII. and VIII. *From the Morrow of Inkerman to the Death of Lord Raglan.* With an Index to the Whole Work. With Maps and Plans. 28s.

*Eothen. A New Edition, uniform with the Cabinet Edition of the 'History of the Invasion of the Crimea.'* 6s.

CHEAPER EDITION. With Portraits and Biographical Sketch of the Author. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. Popular Edition in paper cover, 1s. net.

**KNEIPP.** *My Water-Cure. As Tested through more than Thirty Years, and Described for the Healing of Diseases and the Preservation of Health.* By SEBASTIAN KNEIPP. With a Portrait and other Illustrations. Authorised English Translation from the Thirtieth German Edition, by A. de F. With an Appendix, containing the Latest Developments of Fharer Kneipp's System, and a Preface by E. Gerard. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**LAMB.** *Saints and Savages: The Story of Five Years in the New Hebrides.* By ROBERT LAMB, M.A. (N.Z.), M.B., B.D. (Edin.) With Illustrations by Julian R. Ashton, Sydney, N.S.W. Post 8vo, 6s.

**LANG.**

*A History of Scotland from the Roman Occupation.* By ANDREW LANG. Vol. I. With a Photogravure Frontispiece and Four Maps. Second Edition. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

Vol. II. With a Photogravure Frontispiece. 15s. net.

Vol. III. With a Photogravure Frontispiece. 15s. net.

**Tennyson.** *"Modern English Writers."* 2nd Ed. Cr. 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
POPULAR EDITION, paper covers, 6d.

*Life, Letters, and Diaries of Sir Stafford Northcote, First Earl of Iddesleigh.* With Three Portraits and a View of Pynes. Third Edition. 2 vols. post 8vo, 81s. 6d.

POPULAR EDITION. With Portrait and View of Pynes. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*The Highlands of Scotland in 1750.* From Manuscript 104 in the King's Library, British Museum. With an Introduction by ANDREW LANG. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LANG.**

**The Expansion of the Christian Life.** The Duff Lecture for 1897. By the Rev. J. MARSHALL LANG, D.D. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**The Church and its Social Mission.** Being the Baird Lecture for 1901. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**LAWSON.**

**The Country I Come From.** By HENRY LAWSON. Crown 8vo, 6s.

Joe Wilson and his Mates. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**LAWSON.** British Economics in 1904. By W. R. LAWSON. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**LEHMANN.** Crumbs of Pity, and other Verses; to which are added Six Lives of Great Men. By R. C. LEHMANN, author of 'Anni Fugaces,' &c. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LEIGHTON.** The Life History of British Serpents, and their Local Distribution in the British Isles. By GERALD B. LEIGHTON, M.D. With 50 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LEISHMAN.** The Westminster Directory. Edited, with an Introduction and Notes, by the Very Rev. T. LEISHMAN, D.D. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

**LESSING.** Children of Men. By BRUNO LESSING. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**LEYDEN.** Journal of a Tour in the Highlands and Western Islands of Scotland in 1800. By JOHN LEYDEN. Edited, with a Bibliography, by JAMES SINTON. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**LINDSAY.**

**Recent Advances in Theistic Philosophy of Religion.** By Rev. JAMES LINDSAY, M.A., B.D., B.Sc., F.R.S.E., F.G.S., Minister of the Parish of St Andrew's, Kilmarnock. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**The Progressiveness of Modern Christian Thought.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Essays, Literary and Philosophical.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**The Significance of the Old Testament for Modern Theology.** Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

**The Teaching Function of the Modern Pulpit.** Crown 8vo, 1s. net.

**"LINESMAN."**

**Words by an Eyewitness: The Struggle in Natal.** By "LINESMAN." Eleventh Impression, with Three Additional Chapters. Crown 8vo, 6s. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper covers, 6d.

**The Mechanism of War.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**LOBBAN.** An Anthology of English Verse from Chaucer to the Present Day. By J. H. LOBBAN, M.A. Crown 8vo, gilt top, 5s.

**LOCKHART.**

**Doubles and Quits.** By LAURENCE W. M. LOCKHART. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. A New Edition, Crown 8vo, 2s.

**Fair to See.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Mine is Thine.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**LYNDEN-BELL.** A Primer of Tactics, Fortification, Topography, and Military Law. By Lieut.-Colonel C. P. LYNDEN-BELL. With Diagrams. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**MABIE.**

- Essays on Nature and Culture.** By HAMILTON WRIGHT MABIE.  
With Portrait. Fcap. 8vo, 2s. 6d.  
**Books and Culture.** Fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
**The Life of the Spirit.** Fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**M'CRIE.**

- Works of the Rev. Thomas M'Crie, D.D. Uniform Edition.**  
4 vols. crown 8vo, 24s.  
**Life of John Knox.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
**Life of Andrew Melville.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.  
**History of the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation  
in Italy in the Sixteenth Century.** Crown 8vo, 4s.  
**History of the Progress and Suppression of the Reformation  
in Spain in the Sixteenth Century.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MACDONALD. A Manual of the Criminal Law (Scotland) Pro-  
cedure Act, 1887.** By NORMAN DORAN MACDONALD. Revised by the LORD  
JUSTICE-CLERK. 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**MACDOUGALL AND DODDS. A Manual of the Local Govern-  
ment (Scotland) Act, 1894.** With Introduction, Explanatory Notes, and Copious  
Index. By J. PATTEN MACDOUGALL, Legal Secretary to the Lord Advocate, and  
J. M. DODDS. Tenth Thousand, Revised. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**MACKENZIE. Studies in Roman Law. With Comparative  
Views of the Laws of France, England, and Scotland.** By LORD MACKENZIE,  
one of the Judges of the Court of Session in Scotland. Seventh Edition, Edited  
by JOHN KIRKPATRICK, M.A., LL.B., Advocate, Professor of History in the  
University of Edinburgh. 8vo, 21s.

**MACKINLAY, J. M. Influence of the Pre-Reformation Church  
on Scottish Place-Names.** By J. M. MACKINLAY, F.S.A. Scot. Demy 8vo,  
12s. 6d. net.

**MACLAGAN, R. C. The Perth Incident of 1396.** By R. C.  
MACLAGAN, M.D. Demy 8vo, 6s. net.

**MACLEOD. The Doctrine and Validity of the Ministry and  
Sacraments of the National Church of Scotland.** By the Very Rev. DONALD  
MACLEOD, D.D. Being the Baird Lecture for 1903. Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**MACPHERSON. Books to Read and How to Read Them.** By  
HECTOR MACPHERSON. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**MAIN. Three Hundred English Sonnets. Chosen and Edited  
by DAVID M. MAIN. New Edition.** Fcap. 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MAIR.**

- A Digest of Laws and Decisions, Ecclesiastical and Civil,  
relating to the Constitution, Practice, and Affairs of the Church of Scotland.  
With Notes and Forms of Procedure.** By the Rev. WILLIAM MAIR, D.D., lately  
Minister of the Parish of Earliston. New Edition, Revised. In 1 vol. crown 8vo,  
12s. 6d. net.

**Speaking; or, From Voice Production to the Platform and  
Pulpit.** Third Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 3s.

**MAITLAND.** *The Surrender of Napoleon.* Being the Narrative of the Surrender of Buonaparte, and of his residence on board H.M.S. *Bellerophon*; with a detail of the principal events that occurred in that Ship between the 24th of May and the 8th of August 1815. By Rear-Admiral Sir **FREDERICK LEWIS MAITLAND**, K.C.B. A New Edition. Edited, with a Life of the Author by **WILLIAM KIRK DICKSON**. In 1 vol. post 8vo, with Portraits and other Illustrations. Demy 8vo 15s. net.

**MARSHMAN.** *History of India.* From the Earliest Period to the present time. By **JOHN CLARK MARSHMAN**, C.S.I. Third and Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo, with Map, 6s.

### MARTIN.

*Poems of Giacomo Leopardi.* Translated by Sir **THEODORE MARTIN**, K.C.B. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

*The Æneid of Virgil.* Books I.-VI. Translated by Sir **THEODORE MARTIN**, K.C.B. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*Goethe's Faust.* Part I. Translated into English Verse. Second Edition, crown 8vo, 6s. Ninth Edition, fcap. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*Goethe's Faust.* Part II. Translated into English Verse. Second Edition, Revised. Fcap. 8vo, 6s.

*The Works of Horace.* Translated into English Verse, with Life and Notes. 2 vols. New Edition. Crown 8vo, 21s.

*Poems and Ballads of Heinrich Heine.* Done into English Verse. Third Edition. Small crown 8vo, 5s.

*The Song of the Bell, and other Translations from Schiller, Goethe, Uhland, and Others.* Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*Madonna Pia: A Tragedy; and Three Other Dramas.* Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*Catullus.* With Life and Notes. Second Edition, Revised and Corrected. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*The 'Vita Nuova' of Dante.* Translated, with an Introduction and Notes. Fourth Edition. Small crown 8vo, 5s.

*Aladdin: A Dramatic Poem.* By **ADAM OEHLenschLAEGER**. Fcap. 8vo, 5s.

*Correggio: A Tragedy.* By **OEHLenschLAEGER**. With Notes. Fcap. 8vo, 8s.

*Helena Faucit (Lady Martin).* By Sir **THEODORE MARTIN**, K.C.B., K.C.V.O. With Five Photogravure Plates. Second Edition. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**MARTIN.** *On some of Shakespeare's Female Characters.* By **HELENA FAUCIT**, Lady MARTIN. Dedicated by permission to Her Most Gracious Majesty the Queen. With a Portrait by Lehmann. Seventh Edition, with a new Preface. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d.

### MATHESON.

*Can the Old Faith Live with the New? or, The Problem of Evolution and Revelation.* By the Rev. **GEORGE MATHESON**, D.D. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

*The Psalmist and the Scientist; or, Modern Value of the Religious Sentiment.* Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

*Spiritual Development of St Paul.* Fourth Edition. Cr. 8vo, 5s.

*The Distinctive Messages of the Old Religions.* Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

*Sacred Songs.* Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MAXWELL.**

**The Honourable Sir Charles Murray, K.C.B. A Memoir.**  
By the Right Hon. Sir HERBERT MAXWELL, Bart., M.P., F.S.A., &c. With Five Portraits. Demy 8vo, 18s.

**Life and Times of the Rt. Hon. William Henry Smith, M.P.**  
With Portraits and numerous Illustrations by Herbert Ralton, G. L. Seymour, and Others. 2 vols. demy 8vo, 35s.

POPULAR EDITION. With a Portrait and other Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**Dumfries and Galloway.** Being one of the Volumes of the County Histories of Scotland. With Four Maps. Second Edition. Demy 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**Scottish Land-Names: Their Origin and Meaning.** Being the Rhind Lectures in Archaeology for 1898. Post 8vo, 6s.

**A Duke of Britain. A Romance of the Fourth Century.**  
Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo 6s.

**The Chevalier of the Splendid Crest.** Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MELDRUM.**

**The Conquest of Charlotte.** By DAVID S. MELDRUM. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Holland and the Hollanders.** With numerous Illustrations and a Map. Second Edition. Square 8vo, 6s.

**The Story of Margrédél: Being a Fireside History of a Fife-shire Family.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**Grey Mantle and Gold Fringe.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MELLONE.**

**Studies in Philosophical Criticism and Construction.** By SYDNEY HERBERT MELLONE, M.A. Lond., D.Sc. Edin. Post 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.

**Leaders of Religious Thought in the Nineteenth Century.**  
Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**An Introductory Text-Book of Logic.** Crown 8vo, 5s.

**MERZ. A History of European Thought in the Nineteenth Century.** By JOHN THEODORE MERZ. Vol. I., post 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.  
Vol. II., 15s. net.

**MEYNELL. John Ruskin. "Modern English Writers."** By Mrs MEYNELL. Third Impression. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MICHIE. The Englishman in China during the Victorian Era.**  
As Illustrated in the Life of Sir Rutherford Alcock, K.C.B., D.C.L. By ALEXANDER MICHIE. With Illustrations, Portraits, and Maps. 2 vols. demy 8vo, 38s. net.

**MICKLETHWAIT. The Licensing Act, 1904.** By St J. G. MICKLETHWAIT, M.A., B.C.L., Barrister-at-Law. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**MILL.**

**The Colonel Sahib. A Novel.** By GARRETT MILL. Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Ottavia.** Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Mr Montgomery: Fool.** Crown 8vo, 6s.

**MILLAR. The Mid-Eighteenth Century. "Periods of European Literature."** By J. H. MILLAR. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**MILN.** A Woman and Her Talent. By LOUISE JORDAN MILN.  
6s.

**MITCHELL.** The Scottish Reformation. Being the Baird Lecture for 1899. By the late ALEXANDER F. MITCHELL, D.D., LL.D. Edited by D. HAY FLEMING, LL.D. With a Biographical Sketch of the Author, by James Christie, D.D. Crown 8vo. 6s.

**MODERN ENGLISH WRITERS.** In handy crown 8vo volumes, tastefully bound, price 2s. 6d. each.

Matthew Arnold. By Professor SAINTSBURY. Second Impression.

R. L. Stevenson. By L. COPE CORNFORD. Second Impression.

John Ruskin. By Mrs MEYNELL. Third Impression.

Tennyson. By ANDREW LANG. Second Edition.

Huxley. By EDWARD CLODD.

Thackeray. By CHARLES WHIBLEY.

Browning. By Prof. C. H. HERFORD.

*In Preparation.*

GEORGE ELIOT. By A. T. Quiller-Couch. | FROUDE. By John Oliver Hobbes.

**MOIR.** Life of Mansie Wauch, Tailor in Dalkeith. By D. M. MOIR. With CRUIKSHANK's Illustrations. Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. Another Edition, without Illustrations, fcap. 8vo, 1s. 6d.

#### **MOMERIE.**

Dr Alfred Momerie. His Life and Work. By Mrs MOMERIE.  
Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

The Origin of Evil, and other Sermons. By Rev. ALFRED WILLIAMS MOMERIE, M.A., D.Sc., LL.D. Eighth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 5s.

Personality. The Beginning and End of Metaphysics, and a Necessary Assumption in all Positive Philosophy. Fifth Ed., Revised. Or. 8vo, 2s.

Agnosticism. Fourth Edition, Revised. Crown 8vo, 5s.

Preaching and Hearing; and other Sermons. Fourth Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 5s.

Belief in God. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s.

The Future of Religion, and other Essays. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

The English Church and the Romish Schism. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**MONTAGUE.** Military Topography. Illustrated by Practical Examples of a Practical Subject. By Major-General W. E. MONTAGUE, C.B., P.S.C., late Garrison Instructor Intelligence Department, Author of 'Campaigning in South Africa.' With Forty-one Diagrams. Crown 8vo, 5s.

#### **MORISON.**

Rifts in the Reek. By JEANIE MORISON. With a Photogravure Frontispiece. Crown 8vo, 5s. Bound in buckram for presentation, 6s.

Doorside Ditties. With a Frontispiece. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

Æolus. A Romance in Lyrics. Crown 8vo, 3s.

There as Here. Crown 8vo, 3s.

\*.\* A limited impression on hand-made paper, bound in vellum, 7s. 6d.

**MORISON.**

- Selections from Poems. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d.  
 Sordello. An Outline Analysis of Mr Browning's Poem.  
 Crown 8vo, 2s.  
 Of "Fifine at the Fair," "Christmas Eve and Easter Day,"  
 and other of Mr Browning's Poems. Crown 8vo, 2s.  
 The Purpose of the Ages. Crown 8vo, 2s.  
 Gordon : An Our-day Idyll. Crown 8vo, 2s.  
 Saint Isadora, and other Poems. Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.  
 Snatches of Song. Paper, 1s. 6d. ; cloth, 3s.  
 Pontius Pilate. Paper, 1s. 6d. ; cloth, 3s.  
 Mill o' Forres. Crown 8vo, 1s.  
 Ane Booke of Ballades. Fcap. 4to, 1s.

**MOWBRAY.** Seventy Years at Westminster. With other Letters  
 and Notes of the late Right Hon. Sir JOHN MOWBRAY, Bart., M.P. Edited by  
 his Daughter. With Portraits and other Illustrations. Large crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**MUNRO.**

- Children of Tempest : A Tale of the Outer Isles. By NEIL  
 MUNRO. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
 Doom Castle : A Romance. Second Impression. Crown  
 8vo, 6s.  
 John Splendid. The Tale of a Poor Gentleman and the Little  
 Wars of Lorn. Sixth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. People's Edition, royal 8vo,  
 paper cover, 6d.  
 The Lost Fibroch, and other Sheiling Stories. Fourth  
 Impression. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper cover, 6d.  
 Shoes of Fortune. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
 Gilian the Dreamer. Crown 8vo, 6s.  
 Uniform Edition, 3s. 6d. each.

**MUNRO.**

- Rambles and Studies in Bosnia-Herzegovina and Dalmatia.  
 By ROBERT MUNRO, M.A., M.D., LL.D., F.R.S.E. Second Edition, Revised  
 and Enlarged. With numerous illustrations. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.  
 Prehistoric Problems. With numerous illustrations. Demy  
 8vo, 10s. net.  
 Prehistoric Scotland and its Place in European Civilisation.  
 Being a General Introduction to the "County Histories of Scotland." With  
 numerous illustrations. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**MUNRO.** On Valuation of Property. By WILLIAM MUNRO,  
 M.A., Her Majesty's Assessor of Railways and Canals for Scotland. Second  
 Edition, Revised and Enlarged. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**MY TRIVIAL LIFE AND MISFORTUNE : A Gossip with**  
 no Plot in Particular. By A PLAIN WOMAN. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

By the SAME AUTHOR.

**POOR NELLIE.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**NICHOLSON.**

**A Manual of Zoology, for the Use of Students. With a General Introduction on the Principles of Zoology.** By HENRY ALLEYNE NICHOLSON, M.D., D.Sc., F.L.S., F.G.S., Regius Professor of Natural History in the University of Aberdeen. Seventh Edition, Rewritten and Enlarged. Post 8vo, pp. 356, with 555 Engravings on Wood, 18s.

**Text-Book of Zoology, for Junior Students. Fifth Edition.** Rewritten and Enlarged. Crown 8vo, with 358 Engravings on Wood, 10s. 6d.

**A Manual of Paleontology, for the Use of Students. With a General Introduction on the Principles of Paleontology.** By Professor H. ALLEYNE NICHOLSON and RICHARD LYDEKKER, B.A. Third Edition, entirely Rewritten and greatly Enlarged. 2 vols. 8vo, £3, 2s.

**NICOL.** **Recent Archaeology and the Bible. Being the Croall Lectures for 1898.** By the Rev. THOMAS NICOL, D.D., Professor of Divinity and Biblical Criticism in the University of Aberdeen; Author of 'Recent Explorations in Bible Lands.' Demy 8vo, 9s. net.

**NOBLE.** **The Edge of Circumstance.** By EDWARD NOBLE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**NOYES.** **Poems** by ALFRED NOYES. 7s. 6d. net.

**O.** **The Yellow War.** By O. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**OLIPHANT.**

**Masollam : A Problem of the Period. A Novel.** By LAURENCE OLIPHANT. 3 vols. post 8vo, 25s. 6d.

**Scientific Religion ; or, Higher Possibilities of Life and Practice through the Operation of Natural Forces.** Second Edition. 8vo, 16s.

**Altiora Peto.** Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, boards, 2s. 6d.; cloth, 3s. 6d. Illustrated Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

**Piccadilly.** With Illustrations by Richard Doyle. New Edition, 3s. 6d. Cheap Edition, boards, 2s. 6d. People's Edition, royal 8vo, paper cover, 6d.

**Traits and Travesties ; Social and Political.** Post 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**Episodes in a Life of Adventure ; or, Moss from a Rolling Stone.** Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Haifa : Life in Modern Palestine.** Second Edition. 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**The Land of Gilead.** With Excursions in the Lebanon. With Illustrations and Maps. Demy 8vo, 21s.

**Memoir of the Life of Laurence Oliphant, and of Alice Oliphant, his Wife.** By Mrs M. O. W. OLIPHANT. Seventh Edition. 2 vols. post 8vo, with Portraits. 21s.

**POPULAR EDITION.** With a New Preface. Post 8vo, with Portraits. 7s. 6d.

**OLIPHANT.**

**The Autobiography and Letters of Mrs M. O. W. Oliphant.** Arranged and Edited by Mrs HARRY COGHILL. With Two Portraits. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Annals of a Publishing House.** William Blackwood and his Sons ; Their Magazine and Friends. By Mrs OLIPHANT. With Four Portraits. Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Vols. I. and II. £3, 2s.

**A Widow's Tale, and other Stories.** With an Introductory Note by J. M. BARRIE. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.



**OLIPHANT.**

**Who was Lost and is Found.** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Miss Marjoribanks.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**The Perpetual Curate, and The Rector.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**Salem Chapel, and The Doctor's Family.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Chronicles of Carlingford.** 3 vols. crown 8vo, in uniform binding, gilt top, 8s. 6d. each.

**Katie Stewart, and other Stories.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.

**Katie Stewart.** Illustrated boards, 2s. 6d.

**Valentine and his Brother.** New Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Sons and Daughters.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Stories of the Seen and the Unseen.** Old Lady Mary—The Open Door—The Portrait—The Library Window. Fcap. 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**OMOND.** **The Romantic Triumph.** "Periods of European Literature." By T. S. OMOND. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**O'NEILL.** **Songs of the Glens of Antrim.** By MOIRA O'NEILL. Ninth Impression. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**PAUL.** **History of the Royal Company of Archers, the Queen's Body-Guard for Scotland.** By Sir JAMES BALFOUR PAUL, Advocate of the Scottish Bar. Crown 4to, with Portraits and other Illustrations. £2, 2s.

**PEILE.** **Lawn Tennis as a Game of Skill.** By Lieut.-Col. S. C. F. PEILE, B.S.C. Revised Edition, with new Scoring Rules. Fcap. 8vo, cloth, 1s.

**PERIODS OF EUROPEAN LITERATURE.** Edited by Professor SAINTSBURY. *For List of Volumes, see page 2.*

**PETTIGREW.** **The Handy Book of Bees, and their Profitable Management.** By A. PETTIGREW. Fifth Edition, Enlarged, with Engravings. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**PHILOSOPHICAL CLASSICS FOR ENGLISH READERS.** Edited by WILLIAM KNIGHT, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of St Andrews. Cheap Re-issue in Shilling Volumes not.  
*[For List of Volumes, see page 2.]*

**PITCAIRN.** **The History of the Fife Pitcairns, with Transcripts from Old Charters.** By CONSTANCE PITCAIRN. Demy 8vo, £2, 2s. net.

**POLLOK.** **The Course of Time: A Poem.** By ROBERT POLLOK, A.M. New Edition. With Portrait. Fcap. 8vo, gilt top, 2s. 6d.

**PRESTWICH.** **Essays: Descriptive and Biographical.** By GRACE, Lady PRESTWICH, Author of 'The Harbour Bar' and 'Enga.' With a Memoir by her sister, LOUISA E. MILNE. With Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**PRINGLE-PATTISON.**

**Scottish Philosophy.** A Comparison of the Scottish and German Answers to Hume. Balfour Philosophical Lectures, University of Edinburgh. By A. SETH PRINGLE-PATTISON, LL.D., Professor of Logic and Metaphysics in Edinburgh University. Third Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**Hegelianism and Personality.** Balfour Philosophical Lectures. Second Series. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**Man's Place in the Cosmos, and other Essays.** Second Edition, Enlarged. Post 8vo, 6s. net.

**Two Lectures on Theism.** Delivered on the occasion of the Sesquicentennial Celebration of Princeton University. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**PUBLIC GENERAL STATUTES AFFECTING SCOTLAND**

from 1707 to 1847, with Chronological Table and Index. 8 vols. large 8vo, £3, 8s. Also Published Annually with General Index.

**RANKINE.** The Heart of China. The Story of the China Mission of the Church of Scotland. By Rev. W. H. RANKINE, B.D., Author of 'A Hero of the Dark Continent.' Crown 8vo, 6s.

**RANJITSINHJI.** The Jubilee Book of Cricket. By PRINCE RANJITSINHJI.

**EDITION DE LUXE.** Limited to 350 Copies, printed on hand-made paper, and handsomely bound in buckram. Crown 4to, with 22 Photogravures and 85 full-page Plates. Each copy signed by Prince Ranjitsinhji. Price £5, 5s. net.

**FINE PAPER EDITION.** Medium 8vo, with Photogravure Frontispiece and 106 full-page Plates on art paper. 25s. net.

**POPULAR EDITION.** With 107 full-page Illustrations. Sixth Edition. Large crown 8vo, 6s.

**SIXPENNY EDITION.** With a selection of the Illustrations.

**REYNARD.** The 9th (Queen's Royal) Lancers, from 1715 to 1903. By FRANK H. REYNARD. Royal 8vo, £2, 2s. net.

**ROBERTSON.**

**The Poetry and the Religion of the Psalms.** The Croall Lectures, 1898-94. By JAMES ROBERTSON, D.D., Professor of Oriental Languages in the University of Glasgow. Demy 8vo, 12s.

**The Early Religion of Israel.** As set forth by Biblical Writers and Modern Critical Historians. Being the Baird Lecture for 1888-89. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 10s. 6d.

**ROBERTSON.** A History of German Literature. By JOHN G. ROBERTSON, Professor of German, University of London. Demy 8vo, 10s. 6d. net.

**ROBINSON.** Wild Traits in Tame Animals. Being some Familiar Studies in Evolution. By LOUIS ROBINSON, M.D. With Illustrations by STEPHEN T. DADD. Cheaper Edition. Demy 8vo, 6s.

**RONALDSHAY.**

**On the Outskirts of Empire in Asia.** By the EARL OF RONALDSHAY, F.R.G.S. With numerous Illustrations and Maps. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.

**Sport and Politics under an Eastern Sky.** With numerous Illustrations and Maps. Royal 8vo, 21s. net.

**RUTLAND.**

**Notes of an Irish Tour in 1846.** By the DUKE OF RUTLAND, G.C.B. (LORD JOHN MANNERS). New Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**Correspondence between the Right Honble. William Pitt and Charles Duke of Rutland, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 1781-1787.** With Introductory Note by JOHN DUKE OF RUTLAND. 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**RUTLAND.**

- The Collected Writings of Janetta, Duchess of Rutland.** With Portrait and Illustrations. 2 vols. post 8vo, 15s. net.
- Impressions of Bad-Homburg.** Comprising a Short Account of the Women's Associations of Germany under the Red Cross. By the DUCHESS OF RUTLAND (LADY JOHN MANNERS). Crown 8vo, 1s. 6d.
- Some Personal Recollections of the Later Years of the Earl of Beaconsfield, K.G.** Sixth Edition. 6d.
- Employment of Women in the Public Service.** 6d.
- Some of the Advantages of Easily Accessible Reading and Recreation Rooms and Free Libraries.** With Remarks on Starting and Maintaining them. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 1s.
- A Sequel to Rich Men's Dwellings, and other Occasional Papers.** Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- Encouraging Experiences of Reading and Recreation Rooms, Aims of Guilds, Nottingham Social Guide, Existing Institutions, &c., &c.** Crown 8vo, 1s.

**SAINTSBURY.**

- A History of Criticism and Literary Taste in Europe.** From the Earliest Texts to the Present Day. By GEORGE SAINTSBURY, M.A. (Oxon.), Hon. LL.D. (Aberd.), Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature in the University of Edinburgh. In 3 vols. demy 8vo. Vol. I.—Classical and Medieval Criticism. 16s. net.
- Vol. II.—From the Renaissance to the Decline of Eighteenth Century Orthodoxy. 20s. net.
- Vol. III.—Nineteenth Century. 20s. net.
- Matthew Arnold. "Modern English Writers."** Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.
- The Flourishing of Romance and the Rise of Allegory (12th and 15th Centuries).** "Periods of European Literature." Crown 8vo, 6s. net.
- The Earlier Renaissance. "Periods of European Literature."** Crown 8vo, 6s. net.

**"SCOLOPAX."** A Book of the Snipe. By SCOLOPAX. Illustrated. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**SCOTT. Tom Cringle's Log.** By MICHAEL SCOTT. New Edition. With 19 Full-page Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**SCUDAMORE. Belgium and the Belgians.** By CYRIL SCUDAMORE. With Illustrations. Square crown 8vo, 6s.

**SERMONS TO BRITONS ABROAD:** Preached in a Foreign Station of a Scottish Church. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**SERREL. With Hound and Terrier in the Field.** By ALYS F. SERREL. Edited by FRANCES SLAUGHTER. With numerous Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**SETH. A Study of Ethical Principles.** By JAMES SETH, M.A., Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Edinburgh. Sixth Edition, Revised. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**SHAW. Securities over Moveables.** Four Lectures delivered at the Request of the Society of Accountants in Edinburgh, the Institute of Accountants and Actuaries in Glasgow, and the Institute of Bankers in Scotland, in 1902-3. Demy 8vo, 3s. 6d. net.

**"SIGMA." Personalial: Political, Social and Various.** By "SIGMA." In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**SIMPSON.** *Side-Lights on Siberia. Some account of the Great Siberian Iron Road: The Prisons and Exile System.* By J. Y. SIMPSON, M.A., D.Sc. With numerous illustrations and a Map. Demy 8vo, 16s.

**SINCLAIR.** *The Thistle and Fleur de Lys: A Vocabulary of Franco-Scottish Words.* By ISABEL G. SINCLAIR. Crown 8vo, 3s. net.

**SKELTON.**

*Maitland of Lethington; and the Scotland of Mary Stuart. A History.* By Sir JOHN SKELTON, K.C.B., LL.D. Limited Edition, with Portraits. Demy 8vo, 2 vols., 28s. net.

*The Handbook of Public Health. A New Edition, Revised by JAMES PATTEN MACDOUGALL, Advocate, Secretary of the Local Government Board for Scotland, Joint-Author of 'The Parish Council Guide for Scotland,' and ABRAHAM MURRAY, Chief Clerk of the Local Government Board for Scotland. In Two Parts.* Crown 8vo. Part I.—The Public Health (Scotland) Act, 1897, with Notes. 3s. 6d. net.

**SMITH.**

*The Transition Period. "Periods of European Literature."* By G. GREGORY SMITH. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

*Specimens of Middle Scots.* Post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

**SMITH.** *Retrievers, and how to Break them.* By Lieutenant-Colonel Sir HENRY SMITH, K.C.B. With an Introduction by Mr S. E. SHIRLEY, President of the Kennel Club. Dedicated by special permission to H.R.H. the Duke of Cornwall and York. New Edition, enlarged. With additional illustrations. Crown 8vo, 2s.

**SNELL.** *The Fourteenth Century. "Periods of European Literature."* By F. J. SNELL. Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**SOLBÉ.** *Hints on Hockey.* By F. DE LISLE SOLBÉ. English International Team: 1897, 1898, 1899, 1900. With Diagrams. Fcap. 8vo, 1s.

**"SON OF THE MARSHES, A"**

*From Spring to Fall; or, When Life Stirs.* By "A SON OF THE MARSHES." Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*Within an Hour of London Town: Among Wild Birds and their Haunts.* Edited by J. A. OWEN. Cheap Uniform Edition. Cr. 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*With the Woodlanders and by the Tide.* Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*On Surrey Hills.* Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*Annals of a Fishing Village.* Cheap Uniform Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**SORLEY.**

*The Ethics of Naturalism.* By W. R. SORLEY, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Cambridge. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Recent Tendencies in Ethics.* Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d. net.

**SPROTT.**

*The Worship and Offices of the Church of Scotland.* By GEORGE W. SPROTT, D.D., Minister of North Berwick. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*The Book of Common Order of the Church of Scotland, commonly known as John Knox's Liturgy.* With Historical Introduction and Illustrative Notes. Crown 8vo, 4s. 6d. net.

*Scottish Liturgies of the Reign of James VI.* Edited, with an Introduction and Notes. Crown 8vo, 4s. net.

**STEEVENS.**

**Things Seen : Impressions of Men, Cities, and Books.** By the late G. W. STEEVENS. Edited by G. S. STREET. With a Memoir by W. E. HENLEY, and a Photogravure reproduction of Collier's Portrait. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**From Capetown to Ladysmith, and Egypt in 1898.** Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**In India.** With Map. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**With Kitchener to Khartum.** With 8 Maps and Plans. Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**The Land of the Dollar.** Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**Glimpses of Three Nations.** Memorial Edition. Cr. 8vo, 6s.

**Monologues of the Dead.** Memorial Edition. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**With the Conquering Turk.** With 4 Maps. Ch. Ed. Cr. 8vo, 6s.

**From Capetown to Ladysmith : An Unfinished Record of the South African War.** Edited by VERNON BLACKBURN. With Maps. Crown 8vo 2s. 6d.

**STEPHENS.**

**The Book of the Farm ; detailing the Labours of the Farmer, Farm-Steward, Ploughman, Shepherd, Hedger, Farm-Labourer, Field-Worker, and Cattle-man.** Illustrated with numerous Portraits of Animals and Engravings of Implements, and Plans of Farm Buildings. Fourth Edition. Revised, and in great part Re-written, by JAMES MACDONALD, F.R.S.E., Secretary Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland. Complete in Six Divisional Volumes, bound in cloth, each 10s. 6d., or handsomely bound, in 3 volumes with leather back and gilt top, £3, 3s.

**Catechism of Practical Agriculture.** 22d Thousand. Revised by JAMES MACDONALD, F.R.S.E. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, 1s.

**The Book of Farm Implements and Machines.** By J. SLIGHT and R. SCOTT BURN, Engineers. Edited by HENRY STEPHENS. Large 8vo, £2, 2s.

**STEVENSON.** *British Fungi (Hymenomycetes).* By Rev. JOHN STEVENSON, Author of 'Mycologia Scotica,' Hon. Sec. Cryptogamic Society of Scotland. Vols. I. and II., post 8vo, with Illustrations, price 12s. 6d. net each.

**STEWART.** *Haud Immemor. Reminiscences of Legal and Social Life in Edinburgh and London, 1850-1900.* By CHARLES STEWART. With 10 Photogravure Plates. Royal 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**STEWART AND CUFF.** *Practical Nursing.* By ISLA STEWART, Matron of St Bartholomew's Hospital, London ; and HERBERT E. CUFF, M.D., F.R.C.S., Medical Superintendent North-Eastern Fever Hospital, Tottenham, London. With Diagrams. In 2 vols. crown 8vo. Vol. I. Second Edition. 2s. 6d. net. Vol. II., 3s. 6d. net.

Also in 1 Volume, 5s. net.

**STIRLING.** *Our Regiments in South Africa, 1899-1902.* Their Record, based on the Despatches. By JOHN STIRLING. In 1 vol. demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**STODDART.** *John Stuart Blackie : A Biography.* By ANNA M. STODDART. POPULAR EDITION, with Portrait. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**STORMONTH.**

**Dictionary of the English Language, Pronouncing, Etymological, and Explanatory.** By the Rev. JAMES STORMONTH. Revised by the Rev. F. H. PHILP. Library Edition. New and Cheaper Edition, with Supplement. Imperial 8vo, handsomely bound in half morocco, 13s. net.

**STORMONTH.**

**Etymological and Pronouncing Dictionary of the English Language.** Including a very Copious Selection of Scientific Terms. For use in Schools and Colleges, and as a Book of General Reference. The Pronunciation carefully revised by the Rev. F. H. FENELF, M.A. Cantab. Sixteenth Edition. Revised. Crown 8vo, pp. 1000. 5s. net.

**Handy Dictionary.** New Edition, thoroughly Revised. By WILLIAM BAYNE. 16mo, 1s.

**STORY.** *The Apostolic Ministry in the Scottish Church* (The Baird Lecture for 1897). By R. H. STORY, D.D., Principal of the University of Glasgow, and Chaplain to the Queen. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**STORY.** *William Wetmore Story and his Friends.* From Letters, Diaries, and Recollections. By HENRY JAMES. With 2 Portraits. In 2 vols. post 8vo, 24s. net.

**STRONG.** *Sonnets and Songs.* By A. T. STRONG, M.A. (Oxon.). Crown 8vo, 5s. net.

**SYNGE.** *The Story of the World.* By M. B. SYNGE. With Coloured Frontispieces and numerous Illustrations by E. M. SYNGE, A.R.E., and Maps. 2 vols, 3s. 6d. each net.

**TAYLOR.** *The Story of my Life.* By the late Colonel MEADOWS TAYLOR, Author of 'The Confessions of a Thug,' &c., &c. Edited by his Daughter. Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**THOMSON.** *Handy Book of the Flower-Garden.* By DAVID THOMSON. Crown 8vo, 5s.

**THOMSON.** *A Practical Treatise on the Cultivation of the Grape Vine.* By WILLIAM THOMSON, Tweed Vineyards. Tenth Edition. 8vo, 5s.

**THORBURN.** *The Punjab in Peace and War.* By S. S. THORBURN. Demy 8vo, 12s. 6d. net.

**THURSTON.**

*The Circle.* By KATHERINE CECIL THURSTON. Fifth Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s. People's Edition, paper covers, 6d.

John Chilcote, M.P. Tenth Impression, crown 8vo, 6s.

**TIELE.** *Elements of the Science of Religion.* Part I.—Morphological. Part II.—Ontological. Being the Gifford Lectures delivered before the University of Edinburgh in 1896-98. By G. F. TIELE, Theol. D., Litt.D. (Bonon.), Hon. M.R.A.S., &c., Professor of the Science of Religion in the University of Leiden. In 2 vols. post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net. each.

**TRANSACTIONS OF THE HIGHLAND AND AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY OF SCOTLAND.** Published annually, price 5s.

**TRAVERS.**

*The Way of Escape.* A Novel. By GRAHAM TRAVERS (Margaret Todd, M.D.) Second Impression. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Mona Maclean, Medical Student.* A Novel. Fourteenth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s. Cheaper Edition, 2s. 6d.

*Windyhaugh.* Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Fellow Travellers.* Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**TROTTER.**

**A Leader of Light Horse.** Life of Hodson of Hodson's Horse. By Captain L. J. TROTTER, Author of 'Life of John Nicholson, Soldier and Statesman.' With a Portrait and 2 Maps. Demy 8vo, 16s.

**The Bayard of India.** Life of Lieut.-General Sir James Outram, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.S.I. With Portrait. Demy 8vo, 16s. net.

**TULLOCH.** **Recollections of Forty Years' Service.** By Major-General Sir ALEXANDER BRUCE TULLOCH, K.C.B., C.M.G. Demy 8vo, 15s. net.

**TULLOCH.**

**Modern Theories in Philosophy and Religion.** By JOHN TULLOCH, D.D., Principal of St Mary's College in the University of St Andrews, and one of her Majesty's Chaplains in Ordinary in Scotland. 8vo. 15s.

**Luther, and other Leaders of the Reformation.** Third Edition, Enlarged. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Memoir of Principal Tulloch, D.D., LL.D.** By Mrs OLIPHANT, Author of 'Life of Edward Irving.' Third and Cheaper Edition. 8vo, with Portrait, 7s. 6d.

**TWEEDIE.** **The Arabian Horse: His Country and People.** By Major-General W. TWEEDIE, C.S.I., Bengal Staff Corps; for many years H.B.M.'s Consul-General, Baghdad, and Political Resident for the Government of India in Turkish Arabia. In one vol. royal 4to, with Seven Coloured Plates and other Illustrations, and a Map of the Country. Price 48s. 3s. net.

**VETCH.** **The History and Poetry of the Scottish Border: their Main Features and Relations.** By JOHN VETCH, LL.D., Professor of Logic and Rhetoric, University of Glasgow. New and Enlarged Edition. 2 vols. demy 8vo, 16s.

**VETCH.** **Life, Letters, and Diaries of Lieut.-General Sir Gerald Graham, V.C., G.C.B., R.E.** By Colonel R. H. VETCH, C.B., late Royal Engineers. With Portraits, Plans, and his Principal Despatches. Demy 8vo, 21s.

**WADDELL.**

**Christianity as an Ideal.** By Rev. P. HATELY WADDELL, B.D. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**Essays on Faith.** Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d.

**WARREN'S (SAMUEL) WORKS:—**

**Diary of a Late Physician.** Cloth, 2s. 6d.; boards, 2s.

**Ten Thousand A-Year.** Cloth, 3s. 6d.; boards, 2s. 6d.

**Now and Then. The Lily and the Bea.** Intellectual and Moral Development of the Present Age. 4s. 6d.

**Essays: Critical, Imaginative, and Juridical.** 5s.

**WENLEY.** **Aspects of Pessimism.** By R. M. WENLEY, M.A., D.Sc., D.Phil., Professor of Philosophy in the University of Michigan, U.S.A. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**32 Books Published by William Blackwood & Sons.**

**WHIBLEY.** Thackeray. "Modern English Writers." By CHARLES WHIBLEY. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.

**WHITE.**

The Young Gerande. By EDMUND WHITE. In 1 vol. crown 8vo, 6s.

Bray of Buckholt. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**WHITE.** Mountains of Necessity. By HESTER WHITE. Crown 8vo, 6s.

**WILLIAMSON.** Ideals of Ministry. By A. WALLACE WILLIAMSON, D.D., St Cuthbert's, Edinburgh. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

**WILSON.** The Prophets and Prophecy to the Close of the Eighth Century B.C. By the Rev. ALEXANDER WILSON, M.A., Minister of Ythan Wells, Aberdeenshire. With introductory Preface by the Rev. ALLAN MENZIES, D.D., Professor of Biblical Criticism in the University of St Andrews. Fcap. 8vo, 1s. net.

**WILSON.**

Works of Professor Wilson. Edited by his Son-in-Law, Professor FERRIER. 12 vols. crown 8vo, 42s. 8s.

Christopher in his Sporting-Jacket. 2 vols., 8s.

Isle of Palms, City of the Plague, and other Poems. 4s.

Lights and Shadows of Scottish Life, and other Tales. 4s.

Essays, Critical and Imaginative. 4 vols., 16s.

The Noces Ambrosianæ. 4 vols., 16s.

Homer and his Translators, and the Greek Drama. Crown 8vo, 4s.

**WORSLEY.**

Homer's Odyssey. Translated into English Verse in the Spenserian Stanza. By PHILIP STANHOPE WORSLEY, M.A. New and Cheaper Edition. Post 8vo, 7s. 6d. net.

Homer's Iliad. Translated by P. S. Worsley and Prof. Conington. 2 vols. crown 8vo, 21s.

**WOTHERSPOON.**

Kyrie Eleison ("Lord, have Mercy"). A Manual of Private Prayers. With Notes and Additional Matter. By H. J. WOTHERSPOON, M.A., of St Oswald's, Edinburgh. Cloth, red edges, 1s. net; limp leather, 1s. 6d. net.

Before and After. Being Part I. of 'Kyrie Eleison.' Cloth, limp, 6d. net.

**YATE.** Khurasan and Sistan. By Lieut.-Col. C. E. YATE, C.S.I., C.M.G., F.R.G.S., Indian Staff Corps, Agent to the Governor-General and Chief Commissioner for Baluchistan, late Agent to the Governor-General of India, and Her Britannic Majesty's Consul-General for Khurasan and Sistan. With Map and 25 Illustrations, and Portraits. Demy 8vo, 21s.

**ZACK.**

On Trial. By ZACK. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.

Life is Life, and other Tales and Episodes. Second Edition. Crown 8vo, 6s.





the 1990s, the number of people in the UK who are aged 65 and over has increased by 1.5 million, and the number of people aged 75 and over has increased by 1.2 million (Office for National Statistics 1999). The number of people aged 65 and over is projected to increase to 6.5 million by 2011, and the number of people aged 75 and over to 4.5 million (Office for National Statistics 1999).

There is a growing awareness of the need to address the health and social care needs of the ageing population. The Department of Health (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly, and the Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.

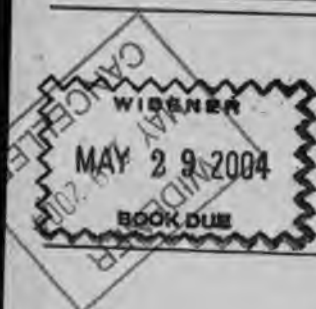
The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly. The Health Service Research Department (1999) has identified the need to develop a new approach to the care of the elderly.



The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library  
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.  
Thank you for helping to preserve  
library collections at Harvard.

